

國家圖書館



001685514

英 漢 對 照

老殘遊記 MR DECADENT

楊 憲 益 譯



五 出 版 社 印 行



由國家圖書館數位化、典藏

楊憲益譯

老

殘

遊

記



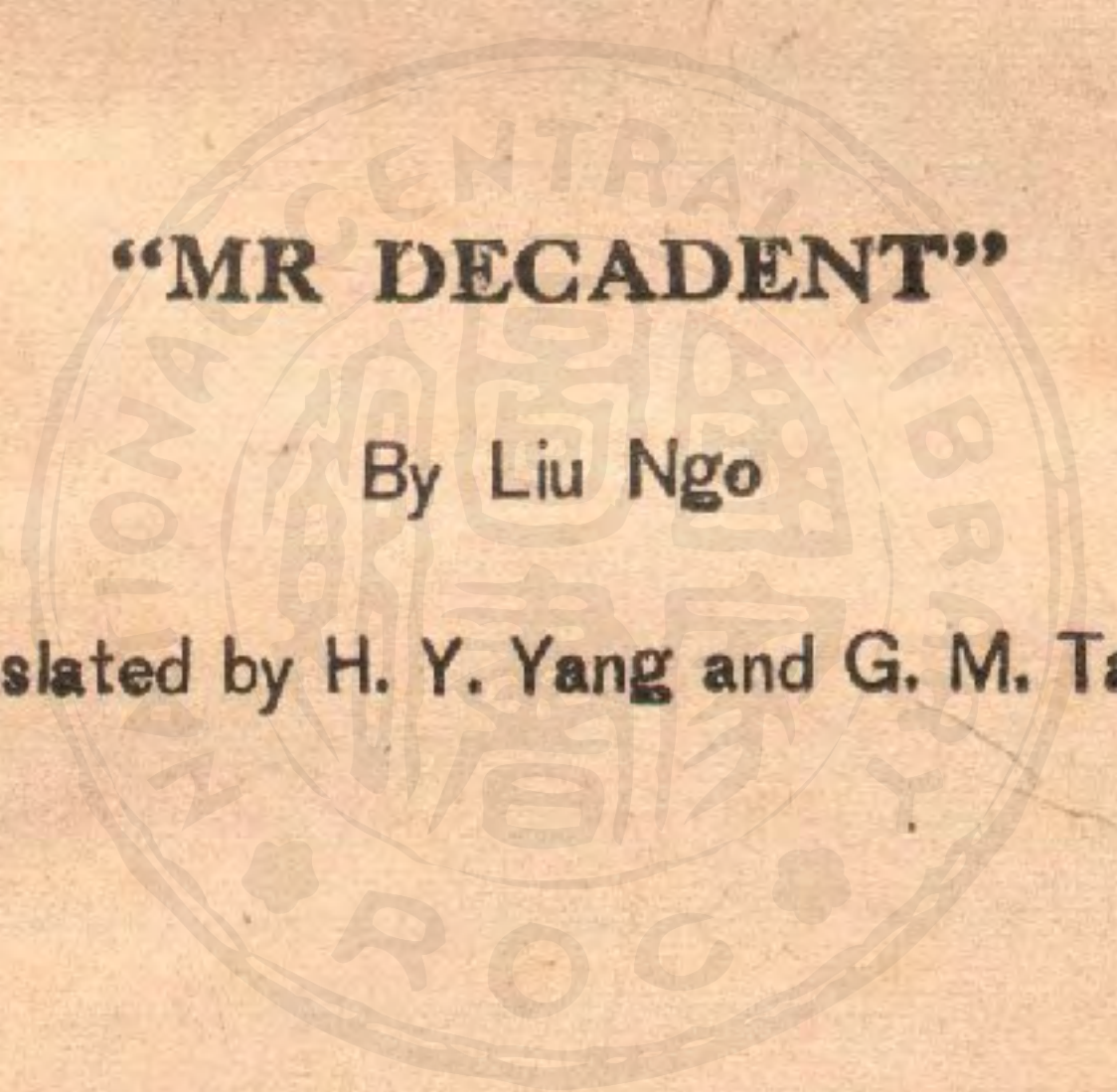
獨立出版社
印行

057.44
774
36

"MR DECADENT"

By Liu Ngo

Translated by H. Y. Yang and G. M. Tayler.



國家圖書館



001685514

PREFACE.

The author of this novel was called Liu Ngo or Liu T'ieh-yun. He was a native of Kiangsu, born in Honan province in 1857. He had one elder brother and three sisters, and his family was one of the earliest to receive Western influence. Liu Ngo was a precocious child who received the traditional Chinese literary training, but who also learnt French and mathematics from Catholic priests, and wrote books on geometry, trigonometry and medicine. Eccentric as he was brilliant, instead of exerting himself to secure influential friends and pass the official examinations, he delighted in scientific studies, and made friends with unconventional individuals or with vagabonds, having a horror of the smooth-spoken, sycophantic, complacent bureaucracy. However for one period, when he was a young man, he closed his doors even to his friends, shutting himself up to study. His family was evidently not wealthy at that period, so that even if he had possessed a scholar's temperament, he could not have continued to study at home in comfort, and he went to Shanghai as a physician; but he was not successful, for he soon turned to business where he failed again, losing all his capital but gaining a considerable experience of human affairs.

In 1888 there was a flood of the Yellow River in Honan, and knowing that the officials responsible were entirely ignorant of river engineering, he offered his services

to Minister Wu Heng-ch'ien, who was much impressed by him. Thereupon Liu Ngo directed and shared the work of the labourers, undertaking all the difficult tasks from which his colleagues shrank; and thus when the work was successfully completed, his reputation was established. As a reward for his services Wu Heng-ch'ien promoted him, but he gave his official title to his brother, preferring to remain as a private individual, and devoted himself next to the work of making a map of the Yellow River. Scarcely was this task finished when there was another flood of the River in Shantung, and Provincial Governor Chang Yao asked him to be one of his advisers. Chang Yao had numerous advisers on the subject of river conservancy, but none of them had any practical knowledge of the subject. The consensus of opinion was that the river banks should be widened, the chief exponent of this theory being a certain Shih Shan-ch'ang; but Liu Ngo strongly opposed this method, and wrote seven memoranda to the effect that the river should be deepened instead of widened.

In 1894, upon the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese war, he returned to the South. The Chinese army was then massed at the northern frontier, but he pointed out the possibility that the Japanese might be making a feint at attacking Manchuria, and in reality launch a surprise attack against their chief naval harbour in order to destroy the Chinese fleet. His warning fell upon deaf ears, but events proved him to have been correct.

Shortly after he was given an official title and spent two years in the capital, urging the government to build railways and develop industry in order to strengthen and enrich the country. Thus he advocated the building of a

railway between Tientsin and Chenchiang, but without success. Nothing daunted he then turned his energies to promoting a scheme for opening an iron-mine in Shansi, and in this he was successful, although this project was responsible for much of his subsequent unpopularity. On account of the poverty of the country, he believed it would be wise to invite Westerners to invest in the mine; but the contract stipulated that after thirty years the ownership of the mine should revert to China. Unfortunately the terms of the contract were later not strictly observed, and Liu Ngo's motives were misunderstood or deliberately misinterpreted by his enemies, who declared that he was a traitor working in the pay of foreign devils.

It was in fact true that by this time Liu Ngo was a very rich man, but no evidence has been brought forward to prove that his wealth was gained in any dishonest way, and his prosperity was probably due simply to a shrewd business sense. When he knew, for instance, that the Tientsin-Pukow railway was to be built, he realised that Pukow, near Shanghai, would become prosperous, and he bought over a thousand Chinese acres of property there, of which he later presented four hundred acres to the government as the site for the railway. His wealth enabled him to indulge his passion for curios, and he had houses in Peking, Suchow, Shanghai, Huaian and Nanking, the latter containing one room built entirely of bricks and tiles of the Han dynasty. At the time of the Boxer Rising, when anti-foreign feeling was most intense, he was living in great luxury in the International Concession at Shanghai, openly and ostentatiously entertaining foreign friends. When the foreign army entered Peking and the

Empress Dowager fled, the citizens of the capital were in danger of starving, although the Imperial Granary was filled with grain. Russian troops had seized the Imperial Granary, but they had no use for rice, and Liu Ngo went to Peking to buy all the rice in the granary very cheaply, to distribute it among the people. He was later impeached on the charge of selling government rice without permission, but he escaped arrest in the International Concession in Shanghai.

At the beginning of the twentieth century, Shang dynasty oracle bones were excavated at Anyang in Honan, and Liu Ngo was the first man to realise their significance for the study of ancient Chinese history. In the autumn of 1902 he bought great quantities of these bones in Peking, and later brought them to the attention of his friend Lo Chen-yu, who became the first authority on the subject.

During these years China's sovereignty was increasingly menaced but the government was too effete to counter the danger, and voices raised in warning or to advocate reforms were simply cries in the wilderness. Unable to take an active part in any constructive programme, in 1905 Liu Ngo wrote "Mr Decadent". Three years later he went South, and in the summer of that year was exiled to Chinese Turkistan, then a region as desolate and remote as the Siberia of Imperial Russia. His presumption in distributing rice to the Peking refugees during the Boxer Rising might have been forgiven him, but the Chinese were increasingly resentful of the encroachments of foreigners upon their rights, and the iron-mine opened at Liu Ngo's instigation was a constant source of irritation to his

compatriots. Thus he was impeached, and his property and many of his curios were confiscated, while he himself died of paralysis in Urumchi in 1909.

In one single life-time Liu Ngo had achieved no little. His work on the Yellow River, the opening of the Shansi iron-mine, the distribution of rice to starving people in Peking, the discovery of the oracle bones and the writing of "Mr Decadent" were achievements any single one of which might have made a man proud. But active, creative and at times even luxurious as was his life, it was tinged throughout with bitterness and melancholy, the melancholy of all far-sighted Chinese of that period, who, while they might lead the life of cultured epicureans themselves, could not fail to realise that their traditional society with all that they valued was passing away, and the future offered no hope. Thus although Liu Ngo's actions were the positive expression of clear-sighted patriotism, his book was the expression of a deep pessimism, for he knew that all his efforts could only serve to patch up something that was beyond repair. In his own introduction to "Mr Decadent", unavailable for this translation, he explained that the book was wrung from him as a cry of anguish, saying "Now we grieve for our own life, for our country, for our society and for our culture. The greater our grief the more bitter our outcry; and thus this book was written. The game of chess is drawing to a close and we are growing old. How can we refrain from lamentation?" So he expressed his sadness at the decadence of China.

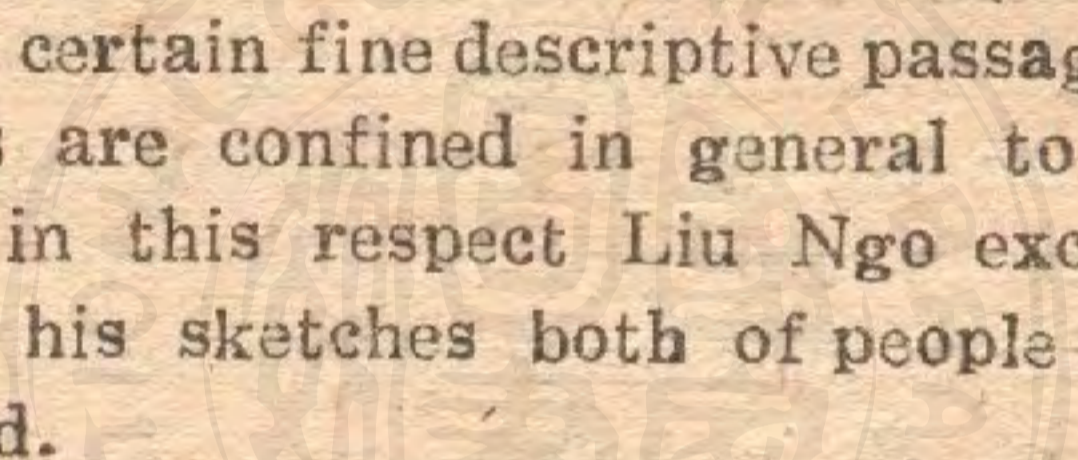
This novel is largely autobiographical, for the hero is easily recognisable as Liu Ngo, by his profession of

physician, his interest in the Yellow River, and his attitude towards officialdom in general. The first chapter of the book is allegorical. Huang Jui-ho (the character 'huang' meaning yellow in Chinese) symbolises the Yellow River, whose sickness broke out every year and could not be cured by ordinary physicians. The boat in danger of being wrecked is China, the four men at the helm being the four ministers of war, the six old masts standing for the six old departments of war and the two new masts the two newly created departments. The length of the boat was two hundred and forty feet, symbolising the twenty four provinces of China, while the thirty feet on the northeast side were the three northeastern provinces of Manchuria, and the ten feet on the east stood for Shantung province. China in the past had relied upon experience and precedent in guiding the ship of state, but such methods would not serve in time of crisis, and the gift of a compass to the pilot symbolises the scientific spirit of the West which would enable statesmen to set a definite course and take effective steps to follow it. The description of those who instigated trouble and advocated a resort to violence suggests that the writer was against revolution.

Of the other characters in the novel, Yu Hsien was drawn from life, being the leader of the Boxer Rising who won fame as an official in Shantung; while Chang Yao the Governor of Shantung is the Governor Chang of the novel, and Shih Shan-ch'ang, Liu Ngo's chief antagonist in river conservancy, is probably the Inspector Shih of the book. "Mr Decadent" was never finished, and the last few chapters, which we have omitted in translation, were

probably written by Liu Ngo's son and are inferior to the original. A continuation, of the novel, called 'The Nun of Tai Shan' was translated by Lin Yu-t'ang with an introduction by Liu Ngo's nephew, saying that these six chapters were discovered in his uncle's home and must have been written by him; but the question of authorship is doubtful, since although there are similarities of language, the subject matter and political outlook are very different.

The unique literary merit of "Mr Decadent" lies largely in the descriptive passages. Apart from the first chapter of "Private Lives of the Chinese Scholars" (Ju Lin Wai Shih) which contains certain fine descriptive passages, traditional Chinese novels are confined in general to narrative and dialogue, and in this respect Liu Ngo excels all his predecessors, for his sketches both of people and of scenery are unsurpassed.



“MR DECADENT”

CHAPTER I.

IT is said that outside the East Gate of Tengchow city in Shantung there is a great mountain called the P'eng Lai mountain, and on the mountain there is a pavilion called the P'eng Lai pavilion. This pavilion stands with painted roofs and pearly screens amidst clouds and rain, surpassingly magnificent. On the west it overlooks the city with its myriad inhabitants wrapped in mist, and on the east it overlooks the ocean with its tumbling waves stretching for a thousand miles. So in the afternoon the city people often bring wine and food here to spend the night in the pavilion, in order to watch the sun rise over the sea the next day at dawn. This is an old established custom; but of this no more.

Our story is concerned with the year that a traveller came here whose name was Mr Decadent. His family name actually was T'ieh and his personal name Ying; but he had taken the pen-name 'Patcher of Decadence' after the monk 'Lazy and Decadent' of the Tang dynasty, whose name is associated with baked potatoes. Since everybody liked and respected him they just called him Mr Decadent, and, without any one knowing how it came about, Mr Decadent became his other name. He was little more than thirty years old and was born south of the Yangtze River. He had studied some poetry and history, but since he did not know how to

走殘遊記

第一章

話說山東登州府東門外，有一座大山，名叫蓬萊山。山上有箇閣子，名叫蓬萊閣。這閣造得畫棟飛雲，珠簾捲雨，十分壯麗。西面看城中人戶，煙雨萬家；東面看海上波濤，崢嶸千里。所以城中人士；往往於下午，攜尊挈榼，在閣中住宿，準備次日天明時，看海中日出；習以爲常。這且不表。

卻說那年有個遊客，名叫老殘；此人原姓鐵，單名一個英字，號補殘，因慕懶殘和尚煨芋的故事，遂取這「殘」字做號。大家因他爲人，頗不討厭，契重他的意思，都叫他老殘；不知不覺，這老殘二字，便成了個別號了。他年紀不過三十多歲，原是江南人氏。當年曾讀幾句詩書，因八股文章不通，所以學也未曾進得，教書又沒人請他；學生意又嫌年紀老，不中用了。其先他的父親，官也是個三四品的，因性情迂拙，不會要錢。所以做了二十年實缺府道，回家仍是典了衣

write examination essays he could not pass the examinations, so no one would invite him to teach; and as for trades he felt he was too old to learn any, and doomed to failure if he tried. Actually his father was an official of the third or fourth rank, but because he was straight-laced and did not know how to grasp money, when he returned home after holding office for twenty years he had to pawn his clothes to pay the travelling expenditure. It was obvious then that he had no money for his son.

Now since Mr Decadent had no family portion and no profession to follow, naturally cold and hunger imperceptibly overtook him. He was just in a desperate plight when heaven took pity on him, and a Taoist priest arrived with a clapper, saying that he had been taught by skilled men their divine art, and could cure all diseases; and indeed when people on the street asked him to cure their diseases they were always healed. Mr Decadent therefore asked him to be his tutor and learned some of his prescriptions, after which he wandered with clapper in hand to make a living by curing people's diseases.

He wandered some twenty years over the length and breadth of China, and this year he had just come to a place in Shantung called Ch'ien Ch'en, where there was a rich man named Huang Jui-ho who had a curious disease, for his body was covered with boils so that every year there would always be a few holes perforated. Some might be cured one year, but the next year more holes would appear in some other part of the body, and although many years had passed, nobody could cure this disease, but it always broke out in summer and by late autumn was better again. In spring that year when Mr Decadent passed this place, Mr Huang's

服做盤費的。你想可有餘資給兒子應用呢？

這老殘既無祖業可守，又無行當可做，自然飢寒二字，漸漸的逼緊來了。正在無可如何；恰巧天不絕人，來了一個搖串鈴的道士，說是曾受異人仙術，能治百病。街上人找他治病，百治百效。所以老殘就拜他爲師，學了幾個口訣；從此也就搖個串鈴子，替人治病餬口去了。

奔走江湖，二十年來。這年剛剛走到山東古千乘地方，有個大戶，姓黃名叫瑞和，害了一個奇病，渾身潰爛；每年總要爛幾個窟窿。今年治好這個，明年又在別處爛幾個窟窿；經歷多年，沒有人能治得這病。每發總在夏天，一過秋分，就不要緊了。那年春天，老殘走到這個地方；黃大戶家管事的，問他可有法子，治這個病？他說：『法子儘有，只是你們未必依我去做，今且略施小術，試試我的手段；若要此病永遠不發，也沒有什麼難處，只須依着古人方法，那是百發百中的。別的病是神農黃帝傳下來的的方法，只有此病，是大禹傳下來的的方法，後來唐朝有個王景，得了這個傳授，以後就沒有人知道此方法了。今日奇緣，

steward asked him if he could cure this sickness, and he said "There is a way, but you may not listen to me. I shall try my small skill, and if you wish to put an end to this sickness it should not be difficult, for all you have to do is follow this ancient prescription which is infallible. For all other diseases there are prescriptions left by the Yellow Emperor, but for this disease there is a prescription left by Yu, the Pacifier of the Flood. Later, in the Tang dynasty, a certain Wang Ching came into possession of this prescription, but after him nobody knew it. Today by great good fortune I know the prescription too."

Thereupon Mr Huang kept Mr Decadent to cure his illness, and, strange to relate, whereas in the past after one place was cured another place would become perforated, this year although there were small boils, not a single hole appeared. Thus Mr Huang was overjoyed, and presently mid-autumn passed, when the danger period was over. Everybody felt that since Mr Huang had suffered from these perforations for more than ten years, this was a great event, and they were all exceedingly happy; so they hired a repertory company and performed plays for three days to thank the gods. They also made a pyramid of chrysanthemum flowers in the western sitting room and had feasts every day and enjoyed themselves to their hearts content.

One day when Mr Decadent had finished his lunch, because he had drunk a cup too many he felt drowsy, and went to his room to lie down on a sofa and rest. No sooner had he closed his eyes, however, when he saw two men come in, one of whom was called Learning and the other Intelligence. These were his best friends and they said together "What are you doing at home on such a fine day?" Mr

在下倒也懂得這個法子。』

於是黃大戶家，遂留老殘住下，替他治病。說起來也奇怪，往年是一處醫好，一處又潰了窟窿；今年雖然小有潰爛，却是一個窟窿也沒有出過。爲此黃大戶家，甚爲喜歡；看看秋分已過，病勢是不要緊了。大家因爲黃大戶不出窟窿，是十多年來沒有的事，異常快活；就叫了個戲班子，唱了三天謝神的戲。又在西花廳上，搭了一座菊花假山；今日開宴明朝設席，鬧得十分暢快。

這日老殘喫過午飯，因多喝了兩杯酒，覺得身子有些困倦，就跑到自己房裏一張睡榻上躺着，歇息歇息。纔閉了眼睛，看外邊走進兩個人來，一個叫文章伯，一個叫德慧生，——這兩人本是老殘的至友，——一齊說道：『這般長天白日，你蹲在家裏做甚？』老殘連忙起身讓坐，說道：『我因這兩天，困於酒食，覺得怪膩的慌。』二人道：『我們現在要往登州府，去訪蓬萊閣的勝景，因此特來約你。車子已替你雇了，你趕緊收拾行李，就此動身罷。』

老殘行李，本不甚多，不過古書數卷，儀器幾件，

Decadent hastily rose to his feet and asked them to sit down, saying "These days I have had too much food and wine, making me feel rather disgruntled." The two men said "We are just off to Tengchow district to visit the P'eng Lai pavilion, and we came specially to invite you. We have already hired a cart for you, so quickly pack up your baggage and we shall start." Mr Decadent's baggage was not very bulky, consisting only of a few books and some scientific instruments, so it was very easy to pack, and they were soon seated in their carts. Then passing wind and dew it was not long before they reached Tengchow, where they found two guest rooms under the pavilion in which they stayed to enjoy the mirage at sea. The next day Mr Decadent said to them "Everybody says the sunrise is a beautiful sight. Tu Fu says in one poem 'The sun rises like a ball tossed up by the ocean.' Why shouldn't we stay awake to-night in order to see the sunrise?" The other two said "If you feel like it we shall certainly accompany you."

Although in autumn night and day are of equal length, still after sunset and before sunrise the light is reflected by the atmosphere so that it seems as if the night is shorter. The three men opened two bottles of wine, brought out the food they had with them, and feasted and talked until imperceptibly the east had grown very bright. Actually it was still some time before sunrise, and this brightness was caused by light reflected by the atmosphere. The three men talked a little while more, and Intelligence said "It is nearly time now; why not go up to the pavilion to wait for it?" Learning said "You can hear how strong the wind is, and there are big windows

收檢也極容易。頃刻之間，便上了車。無非風餐露宿，不久便到了登州，就在蓬萊閣下，覓了兩間客房，大家住下；也就玩賞玩賞海市的虛情，蜃樓的幻景。次日，老殘向文德二公道：『人人都說日出好看，又杜工部詩云：「日出海拋球。」我們今夜何妨不睡，看看日出何如？』二人說道：『老兄有此清興，弟等一定奉陪。』

秋天雖是晝夜停勻時候，究竟日出日入，有蒙氣傳光，還覺得夜是短的。三人開了兩瓶酒，取出攜來的餞饌，一面喫酒，一面談心；不知不覺東方已漸漸放大光明了，——其實離日出尚遠，這就是蒙氣傳光的道理。

三人又略談片刻，德慧生道：『此刻也差不多時候了，我們何妨先到閣上頭去等呢？』文章伯說：『耳邊風聲甚急；上頭窗子太敞，恐怕寒冷，比不得這屋子裏煖和，須多穿兩件衣服上去。』

各人照辦了。又都帶了千里鏡，攜了毯子；由後面扶梯，曲折上去，到了閣子中間靠窗一張桌子旁邊坐下。朝東觀看，只見海中白浪如山，一望無際，東北

on top, so it will be colder there than in this room. We had better put on more clothes."

Each did as he suggested. Bringing their telescopes and carrying rugs they climbed the winding staircase at the back of the pavilion. When they reached the pavilion they sat down at a table by the window and looked towards the east, but all they could see were white waves like hills in the sea stretching without end, while in the northeast were several islands like wisps of smoke; the nearest was called Long Mountain Island and the further ones Great Bamboo and Great Black. By the pavilion the wind shrieked as if it would shake the building. The clouds towered one above the other in the sky, and one great cloud from the north flew to the centre and pressed down upon the rest of the clouds, crushing a cloud in the east harder and harder, neither cloud giving way to the other, but forming fantastic shapes. After some time the clouds were suffused with red, and Intelligence said "Well, Mr Decadent, judging by this light we shan't see the sunrise today." Mr Decadent said "The wind and the waves are enough for me, so that even if I don't see the sun I shall not consider the trip in vain." Learning, who was just gazing through his telescope, said "Look westwards where there is a black thread rising and sinking with the waves; it must be a steamboat passing." Thereupon they all took out their telescopes and focussed on that point. After a while they said "Yes yes. See, there is a very thin black thread on the horizon, which must be a boat." They watched it for a little while and then the steamboat passed.

Intelligence was still holding his telescope and scanning all sides very attentively, when suddenly he exclaimed "Ah,

青煙數點。最近的是長山島最遠便是大竹大黑等島了。那關子旁邊，風聲呼呼價響，彷彿關子都要搖動似的。天上雲氣一片價疊起，只見北邊一片大雲，飛到中間，將原有的雲，壓將下來，並將東邊一片雲擠得越過越緊，越緊越不能相讓，情狀甚爲譎詭。過了些時候，就變成一片紅光了，慧生道：『殘兄！看此光景，今兒日出是看不着的了。』老殘道：『天風海水，能移我情，卽是看不着日出，此行亦不爲辜負！』

章伯正在用望遠鏡凝視，說道：『你們看東邊黑影一綫，隨波出沒，定是一隻輪船，由此經過。』於是大家皆拏出望遠鏡，對着觀看。看了一刻，說道：『是的，是的，——你看有極細一絲黑綫，在那天水交界的地方，那不就是船身嗎？』大家看了一回，那輪船也就過去了。

慧生還拏着望遠鏡，左右窺視，正在凝神，忽然大叫：『噯呀！噯呀！你瞧那邊一隻帆船，在那洪波巨浪之中，好不危險！』兩人齊道：『在什麼地方？』慧生道：『你望正東北瞧那一片雪白浪花，不是長山島嗎？在長山島的這邊，漸漸來得近了。』兩人用望遠鏡

look at that junk in great danger yonder among the huge waves." The other two said "Where?" and Intelligence said "Look northeast where the white foam appears; isn't that Long Mountain Island? It is on this side of the island, gradually drawing near." The other two looked through their telescopes and said "Ah, it certainly is in great danger. Fortunately it is coming this way, and it is less than ten miles from the shore."

About an hour passed and the boat had already drawn very near. The three men watched it attentively through their telescopes and saw that it was about two hundred and forty feet long and of considerable size. The captain was sitting on the bridge, and four men under him were looking after the helm. Fore and aft there were six masts with six old sails, and two new masts with one new sail and one that was slightly worn; thus altogether there were eight masts. The boat was heavily laden and must have had all manner of merchandise in its hold. There were many passengers on the deck, both men and women, but there were no awnings to protect them from the sun and wind, just as in the third class carriages of the Tientsin-Peking trains. Their faces were buffeted by the north wind and their bodies drenched with spray, as they sat there, wet, cold, hungry and frightened. All the people on the boat seemed to be in a desperate state. Under the sails there were two men to each sail in charge of the riggings, and there were many people in the bow and on deck dressed like sailors.

Although the boat was two hundred and forty feet long it was damaged in many places. One part about thirty feet long on the northeast side was already broken

一看，都道：『噯呀！噯呀！實在危險得極！幸而是向這邊來，不過二三十里，就可泊岸了。』

相隔亦不過一點鐘之久，那船來得業已甚近。三人用望遠鏡凝神細看，原來船身有二十三四丈長，是隻很大的船。船主坐在舵樓之上，樓下四人，專管轉舵的事，前後六枝桅杆，掛着六扇舊帆；又有兩枝新桅，掛着一扇簇新的帆，一扇半新不舊的帆。算來這船，便有八枝桅了。船身喫載很重，想那艙裏，一定裝着各項貨物，船面上坐的人口，男男女女，不計其數。却無篷窗遮蓋風日，同那天津到北京三等客位火車一樣。面上有北風吹着，身上浪花濺着，又溼又寒，又飢又怕。看這船上的人，都有民不聊生的氣象。那八扇帆下，各有兩人專管繩脚的事，船頭及船面上，有許多的人，彷彿水手的打扮。

這船雖有二十三四丈長，却是破壞的地方不少。東邊有一塊，約有三四丈長短，已經破壞，浪花直灌進去；那旁——仍是東邊——又一塊丈許長的，水波亦漸漸浸入。其餘的地方，沒有一處無傷痕。

那八個管帆的，却是認真的在那裏照管；只是各

through letting the water pour in, while another part, about ten feet long on the east side, was letting water in too, and there was no part that was not battered. The eight men at the sails really had their heart in their work, but each worked at his own task as if they were on eight different boats, so that there was no cooperation between them. As for the sailors they did nothing but run about among the men and women passengers on board, and they could not see what they were doing; but when they looked at them carefully through their telescopes they found that they were robbing them of their rations and stripping them of their clothes.

When Learning saw this clearly, he could not help shouting aloud: "Those damned scoundrels! See, the boat may sink at any moment, and yet instead of trying to save it and bring it quickly to the shore, they are maltreating innocent people. It makes me furious." Intelligence said "There is no need to worry, for the boat is now only two or three miles away, and when it reaches the coast we can go on board to remonstrate with them." Just as he was speaking, however, they suddenly saw some people being killed on the boat and thrown into the sea, and at the same time the course was changed and the boat headed east again. Learning, stamping with rage, cursed them: "So many innocent lives on board—isn't it a pity that they should die at the hands of a few sailors?" Then after a moment's reflection he said "But fortunately there happen to be many fishing boats at the foot of the mountain. Why don't we jump on one of them and go there to kill those sailors and replace them by others, and so save the lives of the people on board? That would be a good deed."

人管各人的事，彷彿在八隻船上似的，彼此不相關照。那水手只管在那坐船的男男女女隊裏亂竄，不知所做何事。用望遠鏡仔細看去，方知道他在那裏搜他們男男女女所帶的乾糧，並剝那些人身上穿的衣服。

章伯看得親切，不禁狂叫道：『這些該死的奴才！你看這船眼睜睜就要沉覆，他們不知想法補救着，早點泊岸；反在那裏蹂躪好人！氣死我了。』慧生道：『章哥不用着急，此船目下相距不過七八里路，等他泊岸的時候，我們上去勸勸他們便是。』

正在說話之際，忽見那船上殺了幾個人，拋下海去；換過舵來，又向東邊去了。章伯氣得兩脚直跳，罵道：『好好的一船人，無窮性命，無緣無故，斷送在幾個駕駛人手裏，豈不冤枉！』沈思了一回，又說道：『好在我們山脚下，有的是漁船，何不駕駛一隻去，將那幾個駕駛的人打死，換上幾個，豈不救了一船人的性命？何等功德！何等痛快！』

慧生道：『這個辦法雖然痛快，究嫌鹵莽，恐有未妥；請教殘哥，以爲何如？』老殘笑向章伯道：『此計甚妙！只是不知你帶幾營人去？』章伯憤道：『殘

and give us great satisfaction."

Intelligence said "Although this plan is good, it is rather rash, and may be impracticable. What do you think, Mr Decadent?" Mr Decadent laughed and said to Learning "It is a very wonderful plan, only I would like to know how many regiments you are going to take with you?" Learning said angrily "How can you be so foolish? Those people are desperate. We have to save them at once. Of course we three have to go. Where can we find so many regiments of men?" Mr Decadent said "In that case, since there are over two hundred sailors on the boat, if we three want to kill them, I am afraid we shall be killed ourselves, and will never succeed. What do you think?"

After a little thought Learning decided that he was right, so he said "Then what would you do? Would you just watch them being killed?" Mr Decadent said "I do not think the people in charge of the boat are necessarily evil; but there are two reasons why the situation has become so desperate. Firstly, those people on the Pacific can only live in a pacific manner; when the sea is calm they can guide their boat with ease, but their nature is such that when they meet a storm they become demoralised. They were not prepared to meet a storm today, and so they have all been thrown into the greatest confusion. Secondly, they did not prepare a compass, for ordinarily when the weather is fine they follow the old tradition and steer by the stars in the sky, without making great mistakes regarding their directions; this is what we call 'Depending upon heaven for existence.' But now they have run into this bad weather, when the sun and the stars are all covered by clouds, so they have nothing to rely upon.

哥怎麼也這們糊塗！此時人家正在性命交關，不過一時救急，自然是我們三個人去；那裏有幾營人來給你帶去？」老殘道：『既然如此，他們船上駕駛的，不下二百多人；我們三個人，要去殺他，恐怕只會送死，不會成功。高明以爲何如？』

章伯一想，理路却也不錯，便道：『依你怎麼樣？難道白白的看他們死嗎？』老殘道：『依我看來，駕駛的人，未會有錯，只因兩個緣故，所以把這船就弄得狼狽不堪了。怎麼兩個緣故呢？一則他們走太平洋的，只會過太平日子；若遇風平浪靜的時候，他駕駛的情狀，亦有操縱自如之妙。不意今日遇見這大風浪，所以都毛手毛脚。二則他們未曾預備方鍼，平常晴天的時候，照着老法子去走，又有日月星辰可看；所以南北東西，尙還不忒很錯，這叫做「靠天喫飯。」那知遇了這陰天，日月星辰，都被雲氣遮了，所以他們就沒有依傍；心裏不是不想望好處去做，只是不知東南西北，所以越走越錯。爲今之計，依章兄法子，駕駛漁艇，追將上去；他的船重，我們的船輕，一定追得上的。到了之後，送他一個羅盤；他有了方向，就會走

It is not that they don't want to do it well, only they do not know the direction, and so the further they go the more mistakes they make. The best plan now would be to follow Learning's suggestion and take a fishing boat to catch them up; for since their boat is heavy and ours is light, we shall certainly overtake them, and once we have overtaken them we can give them a compass so that they will know the direction and know where to go. Then we should also tell the captain the difference in the art of guiding a boat during storms. Once they listen to us there is no reason why they shouldn't reach the coast at once", Intelligence said "What Mr Decadent says is quite right, and we had better go about it quickly. Otherwise the people in the boat are certainly doomed."

As they were speaking the three men descended from the pavilion and ordered their servants to look after the baggage. Then, empty-handed but for their most accurate compass and measuring instruments with the other instruments necessary for navigation, they went down to the harbour at the foot of the mountain where the fishing boats were moored. They choose a swift fishing boat, hoisted the sail and headed out to sea. Luckily there was a north wind, so whether they went east or west they had the wind at their side to facilitate sailing.

Presently they drew near to the big boat which they were still keeping under close observation through their telescopes. When they were about thirty yards from the boat they could hear the words spoken on board, and it seemed that, apart from the sailors who were robbing the passengers, there were also some other people making fine speeches, whom they heard saying "You people have all

了。再將這有風浪無風浪時駕駛不同之處，告知船主，他們依了我的話，豈不立刻登彼岸了嗎？』慧生道：『老殘所說極是，我們就趕緊照樣辦去。不然，這一船人，實在可危得極。』

說着，三人就下閣子，吩咐從人，看守行李物件，那三人却俱空手，帶了一個最準的羅盤，一個紀限儀器，並幾件行船要用的物件，下了山，山脚下，有個船塢。都是漁船停泊之處。選了一隻輕快漁船，掛起帆來，一直追向前去。幸喜本日刮的是北風，所以向東向西，都是旁風，使帆很便當的。

一霎時，離大船已經不遠了。三人仍擎着望遠鏡細看。及至離大船十餘丈時，連船上人說話，都聽得見了，誰知道除却管船的人搜括衆人財物外，又有一種人，高談闊論的演講。只聽他說道：『你們各人，均出了船錢坐船的，況且這船也就是你祖遺的公司產業；現在已被幾個駕駛人，弄得破壞不堪，你們全家老小性命，都在船上，難道都在這裏等死不成嗎？就不想個法兒回挽回挽呢？真真該死的奴才！』衆人被他罵得啞口無言，內中便有數人出來說道：『你這先生

paid for your passage moreover this boat is the public property left by your ancestors. Now those in charge have put it in a very poor state, so that the lives of all of you, old and young, are jeopardized. Are you going to sit there waiting for your death? If you cannot find some way to save yourselves, you are indeed slaves." The passengers whom they upbraided were all dumbfounded, and some from amongst them came out and said "You have just put into words the woes of our heart which we could not express. Now that you have enlightened us we are indeed very grateful, only may we ask what we should do?" Then the speakers said "You know that in this world nothing can be done without money. Let each of you contribute some money; then we shall put forth all our strength and summon up all our resolution, relying on a few men to shed their blood to secure your safety forever. Would not this be well?" All the passengers then clapped their hands in approval,

Learning heard this from a distance, and said to the two others "I didn't know there were such heroes on board. If we had known earlier we need not have come." Intelligence said "Let us then furl a few sails and follow the boat slowly to watch what they will do. If they are really able, then we can turn back." Mr Decadent said: "You are quite right. It seems to me that those people may not really be men of action, only making use of some modern catch-words to cheat people of their money." Then the three men lowered their sails and followed the big boat slowly until they saw the passengers collect a sum of money and give it to the speakers to see what they would do. However those speakers, after collecting the

新說的，都是我們肺腑中說不出來的話；今日被先生提醒，我們實在感激得很；只是請教有什麼法子呢？」那人便道：『你們知道現在是非錢不行的世界，你們大家斂幾個錢出來；我們捨出自己的本領，頓起精神，拚着幾個人流血，替你們爭個萬世安穩自由的基業；你們看好不好呢！』衆人一齊拍手稱快。

章伯遠遠的聽見，對二人說道：『不想那船上，竟有這等的英雄豪傑！早知如此，我們可以不必來了。』慧生道：『姑且我們將帆落下幾葉來必須緩追那船，看他如何舉動？倘真有道理，我們便可回棹了。』老殘道：『慧哥所說甚是。依愚見看來，這等人恐怕不是辦事的人，只是用幾句文明辭頭，騙幾個錢用用罷了。』

當時三人，便將帆葉落下，緩緩的尾大船之後。只見那船上人，斂了許多錢，交給演說的人，看他如何動手。誰知那演說的人，斂了許多錢去，找了一塊衆人傷害不着的地方，立住了腳，便高聲叫道：『你們沒血性的人！涼血種類的畜生！還不趕緊去打那個掌舵的嗎？』又道：『你們還不把管船的，一個一個

money, chose a place where the people could not reach them, and entrenching themselves there shouted aloud "You cold-blooded reptiles, why don't you go at once to beat the men at the helm?" and again "Why don't you kill all the people in charge of the boat?" There were then some foolish young men who followed their advice, some going to beat the men at the helm, others to curse the captain of the boat; but they were either killed or thrown into the sea.

The speakers then cried aloud from a high place "Why don't you organise yourselves? If all the people on the boat work together, need you fear that you cannot beat them?" However there were also some old and prudent people on the boat who called out, saying "Don't do anything rash. If you behave like that, then before the battle is won you will sink the boat. You must at no cost do that." Intelligence, hearing this, said to Learning "So the heroes here only collect money for themselves, calling upon others to shed blood." Mr Decadent said "It is lucky that there were some men of sense; otherwise the boat would have sunk even faster."

As they were speaking, they hoisted their sails and soon drew abreast of the big boat. The sailor with the grappling iron grappled the big boat, and the three jumped on board. They went to the helm, bowed, took out their compass and measuring instruments and presented them. The men at the helm received them courteously and asked them how these instruments should be used and what advantages they had. They were just talking together when an uproar arose on the lower deck and some sailors cried "Captain! captain! you really must not be deceived by

殺了嗎？』那知就有不懂事的少年，依着去打掌舵的，也有去罵船主的？俱被那旁邊人殺的殺了，拋棄下海的拋棄下海了！

那個演說的人，又在高處大叫道：『你們爲什麼沒有團體！若是全船人一齊動手，還怕打不過他們嗎？』那船上就有老年曉事的人，也高聲叫道：『諸位切不可亂動！倘若這樣做去。勝負未分，船先覆了；萬萬沒有這個辦法！』慧生聽得此語，向章伯道：『原來這裏的英雄只管自己斂錢，叫別人流血的！』老殘道：『幸而尚有幾個老成持重的人；不然，這船更覆得快了。』

說着，三人便將帆葉抽滿，頃刻便與大船相並。篙工將篙子鉤住大船，三人便跳將上去，走至舵樓底下，深深唱了一個喏；便將自己的羅盤及紀限儀器等，取出呈上。舵工看見，倒也和氣，便問此物怎樣用法，有何益處。正在議論，那知那下等水手裏面，忽然起了咆哮，說道：『船主！船主！千萬不可爲這人所惑，他們用的是外國羅盤，一定是洋鬼子差遣來的漢奸；他們是天主教，他們將這隻大船，已經賣與洋鬼

these men. They are using a foreign compass, so they must be traitors sent here by foreign devils; that is how they possess this compass. You had better quickly have them put in chains and killed to avoid future trouble. If you talk to them any more, or use their compass, you will be considered as having accepted the money of foreign devils, and then they will come and take over the boat."

All the passengers were swayed by this uproar, so that even those heroes who made speeches started shouting "These are traitors who want to sell our boat. Kill them! Kill them!" The captain and the men at the helm were still hesitating, when one among them, who was the uncle of the captain, said "Gentlemen, you came with the best intentions, but you can do nothing in face of the angry mob. You had better go quickly." And so, shedding tears, they went back to the small boat. But the people on the big boat were not yet placated, and when they saw them go to the small boat they seized the planks broken by the waves and hurled them at the small boat. It was impossible for such a small fishing boat to stand up to several hundred people bombarding it with all their strength, and in a little while it was broken to pieces and sank into the sea. If you want to know what happened to the three people, you must read the next chapter.

子了；所以總有這個羅盤。請船主趕緊將那三人綁去殺了，以除後患。倘與他們多說幾句話，再用了他的羅盤，就算收了洋鬼子的定錢；他就要來拏我們的船了。』誰知這一陣嘈嚷，滿船的人，多爲之震動；就是那演說的英雄豪傑，也在那裏喊道：『這是賣船的漢奸，快殺快殺！』

船主舵工聽了，俱猶疑不定，內中有一個舵工，是船主的叔父，說道：『你三位來意甚善，只是衆怒難犯，趕快去罷。』三人垂淚，連忙回了小船。那知大船上人，餘怒未息；看三人下了小船，忙用被浪打碎的斷樁破板，打下船去。你想一隻小小漁船，怎禁得幾百個人用力亂砸？頃刻之間，將那漁船打得粉碎，看看沈下海中去了。未知三人性命如何，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER II.

IT is said that when Mr. Decadent was on the fishing boat he was attacked by people and sank into the sea, and, knowing that he could not escape death, he closed his eyes and resigned himself to his fate. He felt like a falling leaf, floating and fluttering, and soon he sank to the bottom of the sea. Then he heard someone shouting in his ear: "Sir, you had better get up now. The meal has been ready in the dining-hall for a long time." Mr Decadent hurriedly opened his eyes, and said in bewilderment "Oh, so it was only a dream."

When another few days had passed. Mr Decadent said to Mr Huang's steward, "Now the weather is becoming cold, your master's sickness will not grow worse again. Next year if you need me I shall offer my service; but now I want to go to Tsinan to see the scenery of the Ta Ming Lake." The steward could not keep him, so he prepared a farewell feast for him that evening, put a thousand taels of silver in a parcel and presented them to him as his fee, and Mr Decadent thanked him, packed up his cases, said goodbye and went away by cart. On the road he saw red leaves on the autumn hills and yellow chrysanthemums in old gardens, so that he was not bored.

When he reached Tsinan and entered the city, there were flowing streams by every house and willow trees by every door, which delighted him even more than the scenery of the South. He went to Commissioner's road and found a

第二章

話說老殘在漁船上，被衆人砸得沉下海去，自知萬無生理，只好閉着眼睛，聽他怎樣。覺得如落葉一般，將身飄飄蕩蕩，頃刻工夫，沉到海底了。只聽耳邊有人叫道：『先生起來罷！天已黑了，飯廳上飯已擺好多時了。』老殘慌忙睜開眼睛，楞了一楞道：『呀！原來是一夢。』

自從那日起，又過了幾天。老殘回黃大戶的管事人道：『現在天氣漸寒，貴居停的病，不會再發，明年如有委用之處，再來效勞，目下鄙人要往濟南府去，看看大明湖的風景。』管事再三挽留不住，只好當晚設酒餞行：封了一千兩銀子，奉給老殘，算是醫生的謝儀。老殘道了謝，也就收拾箱籠，告辭動身，上車去了。一路秋山紅葉，老圃黃花，頗不寂寞。

到了濟南府，進得城來，家家泉水，戶戶垂楊，比江南風景覺得更爲有趣。到了小布政司街，覓了一家客店，名叫高陞店。將行李卸下，開發了車資酒錢，胡

hotel called High Promotion. Here he deposited his baggage, paid for the cart and tipped the driver, ate some dinner and went to sleep. The next morning when he had got up and had some breakfast, he walked the streets sounding his clapper and pursuing his profession. After lunch he walked to the Sparrow Flower Bridge where he hired a small boat and paddled along towards the north. Soon he reached the Li Hsia pavilion, so he stepped ashore and went in, and when he entered the gate he saw a pavilion, the paint of which was practically all worn away, and on it were hanging two scrolls on which was written.

“The Pavilion is ancient as history;

Many are the scholars of Tsinan.”

This couplet was written by Tu Fu and copied by a man called Ho Shao-chi. Although there were a few houses by the pavilion, they held no interest for him, so he returned to the boat and went westwards, and soon he reached the temple of T'ieh Hsuan, the man at the beginning of the Ming dynasty who condemned Prince Yen as a usurper of the throne. Later generations admired his loyalty, and so in spring and autumn the local people often made sacrifice to him.

When he reached the temple he looked southwards and saw on the other side of the lake the Mount of a Thousand Buddhas. There were temples and monasteries, some high and some low, scattered among the grey pines and green cypresses: the red were red as fire, the white as white as snow, the blue as blue as indigo and the green as green as emerald; while here and there were a few red maples. It looked like a big painting by Chao Ch'ien-li, the Sung dynasty painter, only made into a screen a dozen miles long.

亂喫點晚飯，也就睡了。

次日清晨起來，喫點兒點心，便搖着串鈴，滿街蹓了一趟，虛應一應故事。午後便步行至鵲華橋邊，雇了一隻小船，盪起雙槳；朝北不遠，便到了歷下亭前。上岸進去，入了大門，便是一個亭子，油漆已大半剝蝕完了。亭上還懸着一副對聯，寫的是：「歷下亭子古，」「濟南名士多。」「上題杜工部句，」下署「道州何紹基書。」亭子旁邊雖有幾間房屋，却沒有什麼意思。復下船向西盪去，不遠又到了鐵公祠畔。你道鐵公是誰，就是明初與燕王爲難的那個鐵鉉。後人敬他的忠義，所以至今春秋時節，士人尙不時來此進香。

到了鐵公祠前，朝南一望，只見對面千佛山上，梵宮僧樓，與那蒼松翠柏，高下相間；紅的火紅，白的雪白，青的靛青，綠的碧綠；更有那一株半株的丹楓，夾在裏面，彷彿是宋人趙千里的一幅大畫，做了一架數十里長的屏風似的。正在歎賞不絕，忽聽一聲漁唱；低頭望去，誰知那明湖業已澄清同鏡子一般。那千佛山的倒影，映在湖裏，顯得明明白白。那樓臺樹

As he was delighting in the scene suddenly he heard the chant of a fisherman, and when he looked down he saw the lake as clear as a mirror. The inverted image of the mountain was reflected very distinctly in the lake, and the pavilions and trees upon it looked exceptionally bright, so that it seemed even more beautiful and clear than the real mountain above. Ascending the south bank of the lake one comes to the city again, but the sight was screened by reeds. It was just blossom time and a canopy of white flowers in the setting sun, with the mist rising from the water, seemed like a pink carpet strewn as cushions between the two hills, Presenting a most curious sight.

"Since the scenery is so beautiful" thought Mr. Decadent "How is it there are no people here enjoying themselves?" He looked for a while, then turned back and saw on the pillars inside the great gate a couple of scrolls on which was written:

"Lotus on four sides, willows on three,

Mountains within the city and lakes over half the city." He nodded and said to himself "This is true." Then he went in and saw it was the sacrificial hall for T'ieh Hsuan, and in the east there was a lotus pool with winding corridors around it, on the east side of which was a moon-gate, and on the east of the moon-gate were three old chambers bearing the inscription "This is the ancient temple of the Water-nymph." There were also a couple of old scrolls inside the temple on which was written:

"One cup of cold water autumn chrysanthemums,

At midnight the painted barge pierces through the lotus." After visiting the temple he returned by boat to the back of the pavilion where lotus leaves and flowers

木，分外光彩，覺得比上頭的那個千佛山還要好看，還要清楚。這湖的南岸上去，便是街市，却有一叢蘆葦，密密遮住。現在正是開花的時候，一片白花，映着帶水氣的斜陽好似一條粉紅絨毯，做了上下兩個山的墊子；實在奇絕。

老殘心裏想道：『如此佳景，爲何沒有甚麼遊人？……』看了一會兒，回轉身來，看那大門裏面楹柱上，有副對聯，寫的是：

四面荷花三面柳，一城山色半城湖。

暗暗點頭道：真真不錯進內便是鐵公的享堂。朝東便是一個荷池，繞着九曲迴廊。到了荷池東面，就是月門，月門之東，有三間舊房，上有破匾，題着：「古水仙祠」四個大字。祠內一副舊聯，寫的是：

一盞寒泉薦秋菊，三更畫船穿藕花。

過了水仙祠仍舊盪船，到了歷下亭的後面。兩邊荷葉荷花，將船夾住那荷葉初枯，擦的船嗤嗤價響。那水鳥被槳驚起，格格高飛。那已老的蓮蓬，不斷的綑到船窗裏面來，老殘隨手摘了兩個蓮蓬，一面喫着，一面船已到鵲華橋畔。

pressed upon both sides of the boat. The leaves were withered and rustled as they brushed against the boat, while water birds, startled by his paddle, flew away crying. Old lotus seeds drifted continuously into the cabin, and while Mr Decadent picked up two of them and ate them the boat reached the bridge.

Mr Decadent had no sooner reached the bridge than he noticed crowds of people, some carrying goods to sell, some pushing little carts, some sitting on blue sedan-chairs carried by two bearers. He noticed behind one sedan-chair a runner wearing a hat with red tassels, with a folder under his arm, posting along as if his life depended on it, wiping his sweat with his handkerchief as he ran with lowered head. There were children of five or six on the street who did not know how to get out of the way, and the chair-bearers knocked one down, who started crying; That child's mother hastily came and asked "Who knocked you down?" Who knocked you down She asked twice but the child just cried and said nothing, and only after she had asked many times did the child answer, crying "The man carrying the chair." When the mother looked up, the chair was already nearly a mile away, so the woman could do nothing but take the child back, grumbling and scolding.

As Mr Decadent went southwards from the bridge and walked slowly to his street, he happened to raise his head and see a white paper, about one foot long and seven or eight inches wide, pasted on the wall. In the middle was written "Drum Stories" and at the side, in small characters, "At the Lake pavillion on the 24th." The paper was not yet dry and had only just been pasted up, but he did not know what it was about, not having seen such advertisements in other

老殘纔到了鵲華橋，覺得人煙稠密。也有挑擔子的，也有推小車子的，也有坐二人擡的籃呢小轎的。看這轎子後面，一個跟班的戴個紅纓帽子，膀子底下夾了一個護書，拚命價飛奔；一面用手巾揩汗，一面低着頭跑。街上五六歲的孩子，不知避人，被那轎夫無意踢倒一個，他便哇哇的哭起來了。那孩子的母親，趕忙跑來，問：『誰捶倒你的？誰捶倒你的？』問了兩句，那孩子只是哇哇的哭，並不說話。問了半天，纔帶哭道：『這擡轎子的人。』他母親擡頭一看，那轎子已經擡了二里多遠了。那婦人挈了孩子，嘴裏咕嚕咕嚕的罵着，就回去了。

老殘從鵲華橋往南，緩緩向小布政司街走去，一擡頭，見那牆上貼了一張黃紙有一尺長，七八寸寬的光景，居中寫着：「說古書」三個字，旁邊一行小字，是「二十四日明湖居」那紙還未乾燥，心知是纔貼的，只不知道是什麼事情。別處也沒有見過這樣招紙。一路走着，一路盤算。只聽得耳邊有兩個挑擔子的說道：『明兒白妞說書，我們可以不必做生意，來聽書罷。』又走到街上聽鋪子裏有人說道：『前次白妞說

places before. He walked along, thinking as he went. Then he heard two peddlars saying "Tomorrow White Sister is going to tell stories, We had better stop our business and go to hear her." When he came to the street he also heard someone in a shop saying "Last time White Sister told stories you asked for leave. Tomorrow it will be my turn." Everywhere he passed this seemed to form the general topic of conversation, and he marvelled to himself and said "Who can this White Sister be, and what kind of stories does she tell? How is it that with only one advertisement the whole city seems to be going mad?" He walked along and soon reached his hotel and when he went in the waiter came and asked "What will you have for supper?" Mr Decadent gave his order and asked casually "What is the Drum Story? How is it so many people are interested?"

The waiter said "Don't you know, sir? The Drum Story is the local music of Shantung. One drum and a pair of castanets are used, so it is called the "Castanet Drum" and some old stories are told. It was really nothing to talk about until the two sisters-White Sister and Black Sister-appeared in the Wang family. White Sister, whose name is Little Jade, was a prodigy, and when she was only twelve or thirteen she learned the art of telling stories. But she felt that the country tunes were insipid, so she went to the theatres to study, and learnt all the opera tunes, and the songs of all the famous actors she learnt after only one hearing. Because she had a good voice she could sing as high as she liked, and because her breath control was good she could sustain a note as long as she liked. Moreover she also learnt all the southern tunes, which she incorporated into the Drum Story music, and so in two or three years she

書，是你請假的，明兒說書，應該我告假了。』

一路行來，街談巷議，大半都是這話。心裏詫異道：『白妞是何許人？說的是何等樣書；爲甚一紙招貼；便舉國若狂如此？……』信步走來，不知不覺；已到高陞店口。進得店門，茶房便來問道：『客人用什麼夜膳？』老殘一一說過，就順便問道：『你們此地說鼓書，是什麼頑意兒？何以驚動這許多人？』

茶房說：『客人，你不知道？這說鼓書，本是山東鄉下的土調；用一面鼓兩片梨花簡，名叫「梨花大鼓」；演說些前人故事。——一本也沒甚希奇。自從王家出了個白妞黑妞姊妹兩個，這白妞名叫王大玉，此人是天生的怪物；他十二三歲時，就學會了說書的本事。他却嫌鄉下的調兒，沒甚麼出奇，就到戲園裏看戲，就將什麼西皮二簧梆子腔調，一聽就會；什麼俞三勝陳長庚張二奎等人的調子，他一聽就會了。仗着他的喉嚨，要多高就多高；他的中氣，要多長就多長；他又把南方的甚麼崑腔小曲，種種的腔調，他都拏來裝在大鼓書的調兒裏面。不過二三年工夫，製出這個調兒。竟至無論南北高下的人，聽了他唱書，無不神魂

developed this new music. The result is that whoever hears her singing, no matter where he comes from or what his position in society cannot fail to be moved. Now there is an advertisement announcing a performance tomorrow. If you don't believe me you can go tomorrow and listen yourself, and then you will know it for yourself. Only if you want to listen you will have to go early, for although the performance begins at one o'clock in the afternoon, if you go there at ten o'clock there will be no seats." Mr Decadent hearing this felt somewhat sceptical.

The next morning he got up at six o'clock and went first to the South Gate to see Shun's Well; then he went outside the gate to the foot of the mountain to see the place where in ancient times Shun was supposed to have ploughed. When he returned to the hotel it was already nine o'clock, and after a quick breakfast he went to the theatre, arriving there at about ten o'clock. This lake pavillion was a big theatre with over a hundred tables before the stage, but when he went in there was already a full house, with only seven or eight tables left, all marked 'Reserved' for the Inspector, the Examiner, the governor and other high officials. Mr Decadent looked round for a long time but could not find a place, so he took two hundred cash from his sleeve and gave them to the attendant, who then fetched him a small stool so that he could sit down among the others. He saw a table on the stage on which there was a drum, and on the drum were two pieces of steel which he knew must be the castanets; by the side there was a three-stringed fiddle, and behind the table there were two chairs. There was no one on the stage and he felt rather amused to see such a big stage entirely empty. There were some

顛倒。現在已有招紙，明兒就唱。你不信去聽一聽，就知道了。只是要聽，還要早去，他雖是一點鐘開唱，若到十點鐘去，便沒有坐位了。』

老殘聽得也不甚相信。次日六鐘點起，先到南門內，看了舜井。又出南門外，到歷山脚下，看看昔日大舜耕田的地方。及至回店，已有九點鐘光景，趕忙喫了飯，走到明湖居不過十點時候。

那明湖居本是個大戲園子，臺前有一百多張桌子。那知進了園門，園子裏面，已經坐滿了。只有七八張桌子，都貼着撫院定，學院定，道署定的精紙條兒。老殘看了半天，無處插足；只好袖子裏拏了二百錢，送了看坐兒的，纔弄了一條板凳，在人縫裏坐下。看那戲臺上，擺了一張半桌，桌上放着一面板鼓。鼓上放了兩片鐵簡兒。心裏知道這就是梨花簡了。旁邊放了一個三絃子。半桌後面，列着兩把椅子，並無一個人在臺上。偌大個戲臺，空空洞洞，一無他物，看來不覺好笑，園子裏面，頂着籃子賣燒餅油條的，約有一二十個。都爲那不吃飯來的人，買了充飢的。

到了十一點鐘，只見門口轎車，漸漸擁擠多了，

twenty people in the theatre carrying baskets on their heads selling refreshments for those who had come without their lunch.

At about eleven o'clock more sedan-chairs and carriages came to the door, all belonging to officials who were wearing ordinary dress and had brought their servants. By twelve o'clock all the empty tables in front were full, but people continued to come in, and the attendants brought small stools for them and squeezed them among the others. The newcomers greeted each other, some of them kneeling on one knee and some giving a more casual greeting, but most of them kneeling on one knee. They all talked at the top of their voices, laughing and chattering. The other tables were full of people who looked like merchants or local scholars, all gossipping noisily. Because there were so many people it was impossible to catch what they were saying, and he did not try.

When it was about half past twelve a man came out from behind the screen wearing a blue cloth gown; he had a long face as full of pimples as a dried orange peel, and was excessively ugly, but he seemed quite self-possessed. He came out without uttering a word, sat down on a chair on the left hand side of the table, slowly took the fiddle, very casually tuned it and played a few tunes to which the audience paid very little attention. Then he played a long piece, the name of which Mr Decadent did not know, but towards the end all the fingers were called into play, and the melody, high and low, quick and slow, moved people's heart as if there were dozens of strings and hundreds of fingers playing together. At that time there were incessant "Bravos" from beneath the stage, but the tune could still be

都是官員。着了便衣，帶了家人，陸續進來。不到十二點鐘，前面幾張空桌，俱坐滿了。不時還有人進來看坐兒，也搬條短凳在夾縫中安插。這一羣人，彼此招呼：有打千兒的；有作揖的，——大半打千兒的多。高談闊論，笑語自喧。其餘桌子，看來都是作買賣的人；又有些是本地讀書人的樣子。大家都噉噉喳喳，在那裏閒話。因爲人太多了，說的話，都聽不清楚，也不去管他。

到了十二點半時候，那臺子簾子後，走出一個男人：穿一件藍布長衫，長長的臉兒，滿臉疙疸，彷彿像風乾福橘皮似的，甚爲醜陋。但那人舉止，倒還沈靜。出子臺來，並無一語，就往半桌後面左首一張椅上坐下。慢慢的將那三絃子取來隨便和了一和絃，彈了一二曲小調，人也不甚留心去聽他。後來彈了一枝大調，也不知道什麼牌子；只是到後來全用輪指，那抑揚頓挫，入耳動心，恍若有幾十根絃，幾百個指頭，在那裏彈似的。這時臺下叫好的聲音，不絕於耳，却也壓不下那絃子去。這曲彈罷，就歇了手。旁邊有人送上茶來。

distinctly heard. After the song was finished he stopped, and somebody by the side presented him tea.

After a few minutes a girl appeared from behind the screen who seemed sixteen or seventeen years old; she had an oval face and her hair was gathered in a knot. She was wearing silver ear-rings, a blue cloth jacket and blue cloth trousers with a yellow border; but although they were cloth garments, they looked quite clean. She sat on the chair on the right hand side behind the table, and when the fiddler took up the fiddle again and started playing, the girl stood up with the castanets in her left hand, holding them between her fingers and clashing them to the tune played by the fiddle; in her right hand she took the drum stick and listened carefully to the rhythm, then with one beat of the drum she burst^d out singing. Every word was clear and every sound was mellow, like young orioles emerging from a valley or young swallows returning to their nest. There were seven words to every line, and some dozen lines to one paragraph. Some lines were slow and some quick, some low and some high, while as for the variations in the melody, they were innumerable. All other songs and tunes that Mr Decadent had heard seemed inferior to this, and he felt that she had attained the summit of perfection.

There were two people sitting beside him, and one whispered to the other "I suppose this is white Sister?" but the other said "No, This is Black Sister, her younger sister. She learned all her tunes from White Sister, but she is much inferior to her. People can analyse her good points whereas they can't analyse White Sister's good points; and people can learn her good points whereas they can't learn White Sister's good points. All these years pleasure-loving

停了數分鐘時，簾子裏面，出來一個姑娘，約有十六七歲。長長鴨蛋臉兒，梳了一個抓髻，戴了一副銀耳環，穿了一件藍布外褂兒，一條藍布袴子，都是黃布鑲滾的；雖是粗布衣裳，倒也十分潔淨。去到半桌後面右首椅子坐下。那彈絃子的，便取了絃子，錚錚鏗鏘彈起來了。這姑娘便立起身來，左手取了梨花簡，夾在指縫裏，便丁丁當當的敲，與那絃子聲音相應。右手持了鼓槌子，凝神聽那絃子節奏。忽羯鼓一聲，歌喉遽發，字字清脆，聲聲宛轉；如新鶯出谷，乳燕歸巢。每句七字，每段十餘句，或緩或急，忽低忽高；其中轉腔換調之處，百變不窮。一切歌曲腔調，俱出其下，以爲觀止矣。

旁坐有兩人，其一人低聲問那人道：『此想必是白妞了？』其一人曰：『不是，這人叫黑妞，是白妞的妹子。他的調兒，都是他姊姊——白妞——教的。若比白妞，還不知差多遠呢。他的好處，人說得出；白妞的好處，人說不出的。他的好處，人學的到，白妞的好處，人學不到的。你想這幾年好玩耍的人，誰不學他的調兒呢？就是鑿子裏的姑娘們，也都學他；只是頂

people have learnt her tunes, and even the girls in the brothels have imitated her; but at the most they can only sing one or two lines as well as Black Sister, while nobody can sing even one tenth as well as White Sister."

As they were speaking Black Sister finished her song and went the back. Then all the people in the theatre chattered and laughed, and all the pedlars selling melon-seeds, monkey-nuts, fruit-jellies and walnuts, cried their wares, until the whole theatre was a Babel of human voices. In the middle of this tumult a girl came from behind the stage who was eighteen or nineteen years old. She was dressed in every respect like the other, and had a long face, white skin and average good looks; but she appeared delicate without looking too soft, and distinguished without looking too cold. She came out with lowered head, seated herself behind the table, and clashed her castanets. It was curious that although these were only two pieces of ordinary steel, yet between her fingers they seemed instruments of great range. Then beating the drum softly twice she raised her head to look at the spectators, and her eyes appeared like autumn pools, like frosty stars, like pearls or black crystals kept in quicksilver. She glanced right and left until even the people far away felt that Little Jade was looking at them, to say nothing of those seated near her. After this the whole theatre became so silent that even if the Emperor himself had appeared there could not have been greater quiet. One could have heard a pin drop.

Little Jade then parted her lips and sang a few lines. The sound was low but indescribably sweet. All the organs of the body seemed smoothed as if by an iron, each in its proper place, while the whole body felt as if after drinking

多有一兩句到黑丑的地步。若是白丑的好處，從沒有一個人能及他十分裏的一分的。』

說着的時候，黑丑已唱完了。走進後面去了，這時滿園子的人，談談笑笑。賣瓜子，落花生，山裏紅，核桃仁的：高聲喊叫着賣。滿園子裏聽來，都是人聲。

正在熱鬧哄哄的時候，只見那臺後，又出來一位姑娘年紀約十八九歲，裝束與前一個，毫無分別。瓜子臉兒，白淨面龐，相貌不過中人以上之姿色，只覺秀而不媚，清而不寒：半低着頭出來，立在半桌後面，把梨花簡丁當了幾聲。煞是奇怪，只是兩片頑鐵，到他手裏，便有五音十二律似的。又將鼓槌子，輕輕的點了兩下，方抬起頭來，向臺下一盼，那雙眼睛，如秋水，如寒星，如寶珠，如白水銀裏頭養着兩丸黑晶球，左右一顧盼，連那坐在遠遠牆角子的人，都覺得王小玉看見他的；那坐得近的，更不必說。就這一眼，滿園子裏，便鴉雀無聲，比皇帝出來，還要肅靜得多呢，連一根鍼，掉在地下，都聽得響的。

王小玉便啓朱唇，發皓齒，唱了幾句書兒。聲音初不甚大，覺得入耳，有說不出來的妙音；五臟六腑

nectar, and there was not a pore that was not relaxed. After she had sung a few dozen lines, she gradually sang higher and higher, until suddenly she soared to a very high pitch, as if a steel rope had been flung into the sky, and Mr Decadent was secretly amazed. But even at that high pitch her voice could still circle and revolve, and after several trills it rose to a still higher note and went up the scale for three or four notes more. It was like climbing the Tai Mountain from the Ngo Lai cliff on the west side, First you see the precipice reaching up to heaven, but when you attain the summit you realise that another peak is still above, and when you reach that one you realise that there is another peak on top. Thus with every turn the sense of insecurity increases, and as the sense of insecurity increases so also does one's amazement.

When Little Jade reached the highest pitch her voice suddenly dropped, and winding skilfully with all its art seemed like a flying snake weaving its way down through the different ridges of the mountain and coiling round several times in a very short space. Her voice dropped lower and lower until gradually it became inaudible, and the people in the theatre all held their breath in suspense and dared not make the least movement. In two or three minutes there seemed to be a small voice slowly coming out from beneath the ground to flare up again like foreign crackers or like a fire ball soaring up and multiplying into a thousand trails of coloured light, before scattering down again. After the rise of this sound, many songs seemed to start all together. The fiddler also used all his fingers and played high and low in harmony with the voice, like many birds singing at dawn amid spring flowers, so that people's

裏像熨斗熨過，無一處不伏貼；三萬六千個毛孔，像喫了人參果，無一孔不暢快。唱了十數句之後，漸漸的越唱越高；忽然拔了一個尖兒，像一綫網絲，拋入天際，不禁暗暗叫絕。那知他那極高的地方，就能迴環轉折；幾轉之後，又高一層，接連有三四疊，節節高起。恍如由傲來峯西面，攀登泰山的景象：初看傲來峯削壁千仞，以爲上與天齊；及至翻到傲來峯頂，纔見扇子崖，更在傲來峯上；及至翻到扇子崖，又見南天門更在扇子崖上。愈翻愈險，愈險愈奇。

那王小玉唱到極高的三四疊後，陡然一落，又極力騁其千迴百折的精神，如一條飛蛇，在黃山三十六峯半中腰裏，盤旋穿插；頃刻之間，周匝數遍。從此以後，愈唱愈低，愈低愈細，那聲音漸漸的聽不見了。滿園子的人，都屏氣凝神，不敢少動。約有二三分鐘之久，彷彿有一點聲音，從地底下發出。這一出之後，忽又揚起，像放那東洋煙火，一個彈子上天，隨化千百道五色火光，縱橫散亂。這一聲飛起，即有無限聲音，俱來並發。那彈絃子的，亦全用輪指，忽大忽小，同他那聲音相和相合：有如花塢春曉，好鳥亂鳴。耳朵忙

ears could not contain all the sounds, and did not know to which melody to listen. In this medley they suddenly heard a final sound, and both voice and strings became mute, while "Bravos" sounded under the stage like thunder.

After a little while the tumult began to die down and a young man less than thirty years old in the front seat under the stage started to speak with a Hunan accent, saying "When I studied in the past and read descriptions of good singers, it was said that the echoes of their songs would linger about the roof for three days; but I would not believe it, thinking it was the writer's fancy, for how could the echoes linger in the roof and how could they hover there for three days? But since I heard Miss Wang singing I realise how well the ancient scholars expressed it; for every time I heard her singing I could hear her voice in my ears for several days, so that I could not give my whole attention to anything I did. Indeed I felt that even three days was rather inadequate, and would rather use Confucius' words "For three months I cannot taste the flavour of meat. Three months would be more correct." All the people beside him said "His criticism is quite right, and expresses our own feeling."

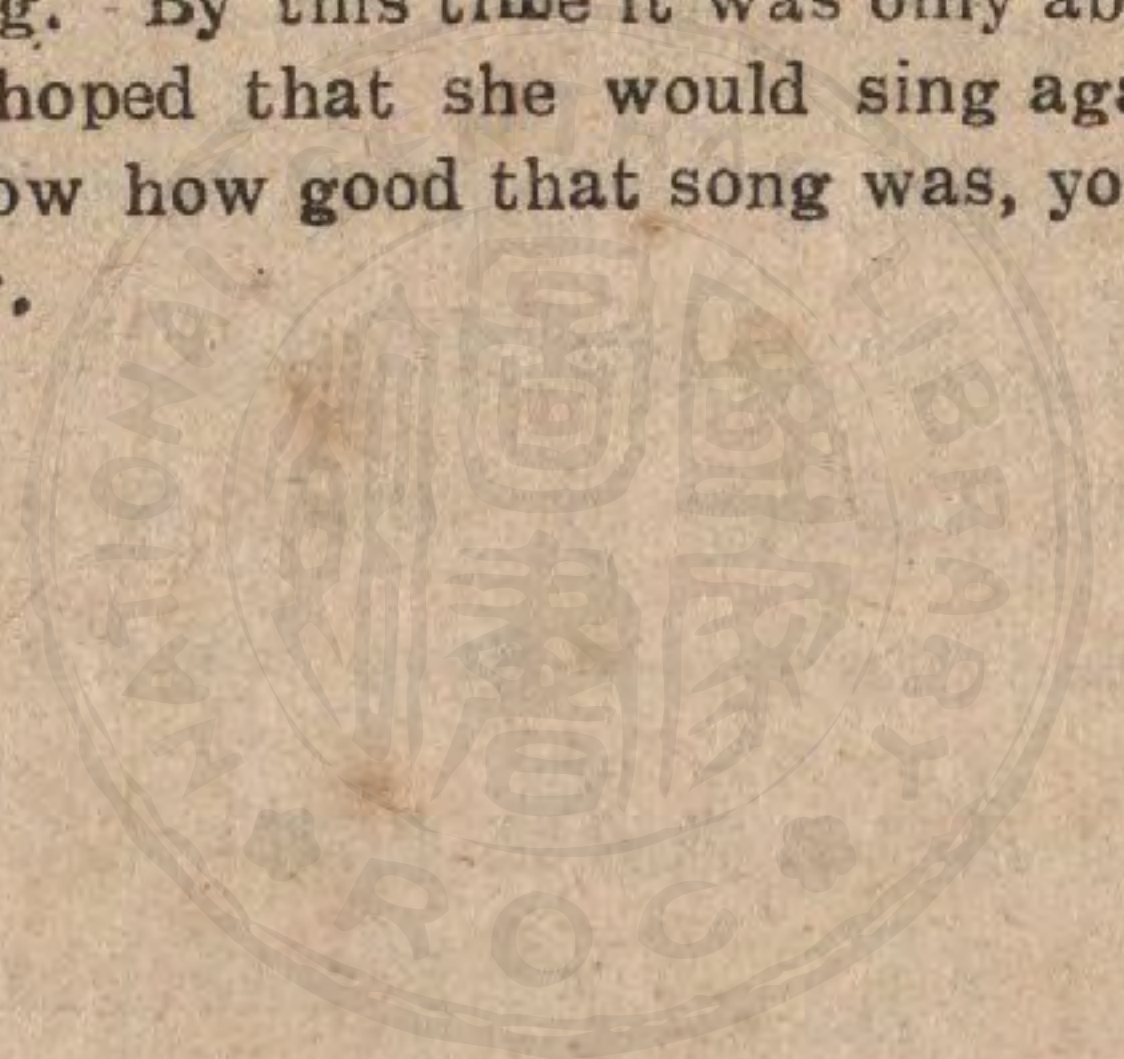
As they were speaking Black Sister came out and sang something, and then White Sister came out again. He heard people say that the song she sang was called "The Tale of the Black Donkey" and was only about a scholar who saw a beautiful maiden passing by, riding on a black donkey. In order to describe the beautiful maiden the qualities of the black donkey were first enumerated, and when it came to the description of the beauty of the girl, there were only a few lines and the tale was done. It was all sung quickly,

不過來，不曉得聽那一聲的爲是。正在撩亂之際，忽聽霍然一聲，人絃俱寂。這時台下叫好之聲，轟然雷動。

停了一回，鬧聲稍定。只聽那台下正座上，有一個少年，不到三十歲光景，是湖南口音，說道：『當年讀書見古人形容歌聲的好處，有那「餘音繞梁，三日不絕」的話，我總不信；空中設想，餘音怎能繞梁呢？又怎能三日不去呢？及聽小玉先生說書，纔知古人措辭之妙。每次聽他說書之後，總有好幾天，耳朵裏無非都是他的書音；無論做什麼事，總不入神，反覺得「三日不絕，」這三日還嫌他下得太少。還是孔子三月不知肉味，「三月」一字，形容得透澈些。』旁人都說道：『夢湘先生，論得透闢極了，於我心有感感焉。』

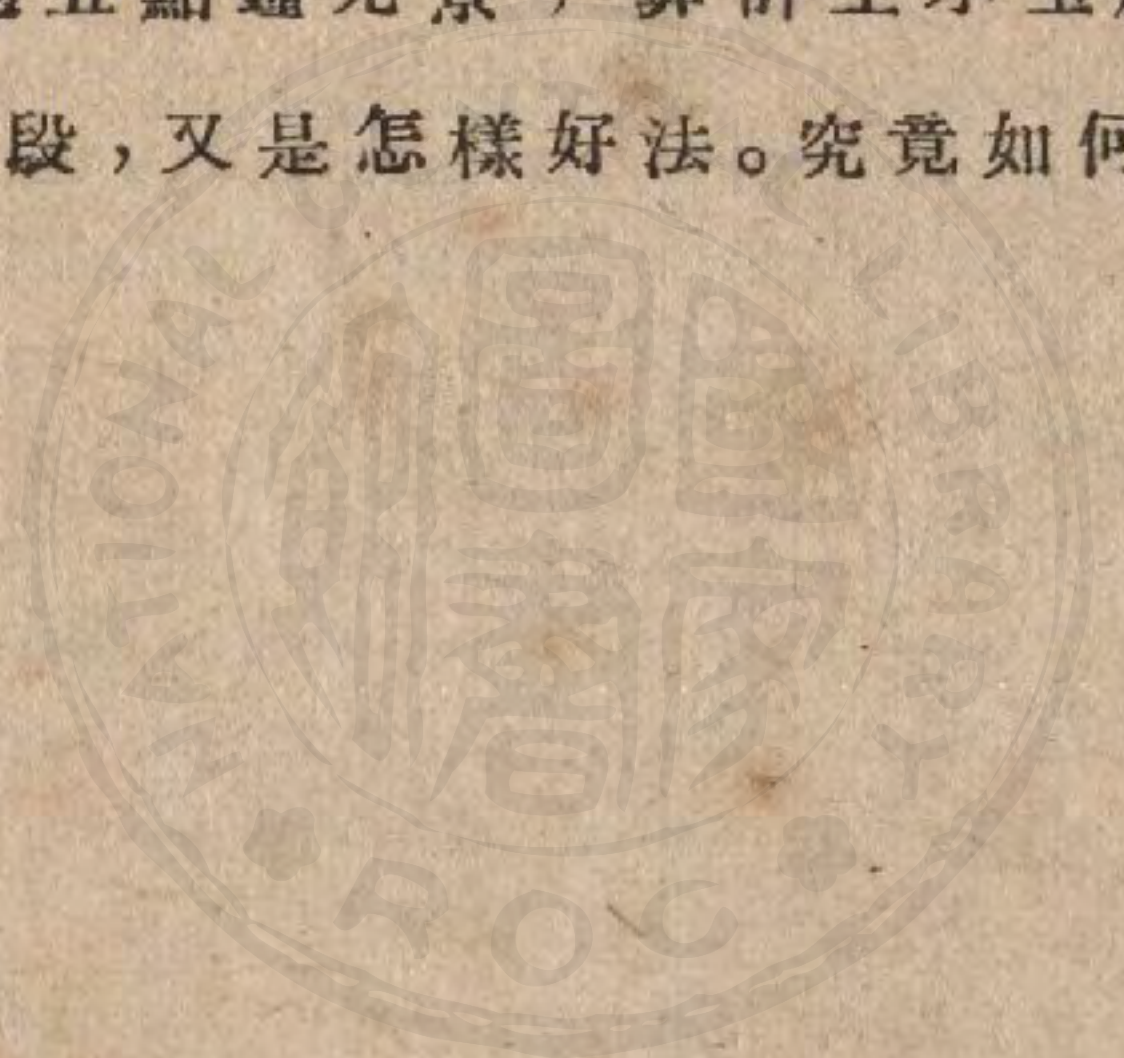
說着，那黑妞又上來說了一段，底下便又是白妞上場。這一段，聞旁人說：叫做黑驢段，聽了去，不過是一個士子，見一個美人，騎了黑驢走過去的故事。將形容那美人，先形容那黑驢子怎樣好法。待鋪敘到美人的好處，不過數語；這段書也就完了。其音節全

the speed increasing as it went along. One of Po Chu-i's poems has the words "Like big pearls and small pearls falling upon a jade disc" and these lines would apply to the excellency of this song. When she was at her quickest the listeners could not even keep up with her, yet every word was clearly enunciated, and there was not a single sound that did not penetrate to people's ears. This was the wonder of it. Nevertheless it seemed slightly inferior to the last song. By this time it was only about five o'clock and people hoped that she would sing again. But if you want to know how good that song was, you must read the next chapter.



是快板，越說越快。白香山詞云：「大小玉珠落珠盤，」可謂盡其妙處。在說得極快的時候，聽的人彷彿都趕不上的樣子；聽他却字字清楚，無一字不送到人耳輪深處，這是他的獨到；然比着前一段，却未免遜一籌了，

這時不過五點鐘光景，算計王小玉應該還有一段？不知那一段，又是怎樣好法。究竟如何，且看下回分解。



CHAPTER III.

IT is said that the people in the theatre thought that since it was still early Little Jade would sing for them again; but it was only her sister who came out and sang a few lines, and when she finished all the people dispersed. The next day Mr Decadent felt some misgivings over his thousand taels of silver in the hotel, so he went to the main road and found a bank called Sunrise, and sent eight hundred taels through it to his family in Hsuchow, keeping a hundred odd taels of silver for himself. From the shops on the street he bought a roll of silk and a length of flannel material for a gown; these he took to the hotel, and called a tailor to make him a gown and a jacket, for it was already the ninth month and, although the weather was still warm, as soon as the north-west wind started blowing he would have to wear padded clothes. So he gave the order for his new gown.

After lunch he went out of the West Gate to drink tea by the Bubbling Fountain. This Bubbling Fountain was the foremost of seventy two springs in Tsinan. It was within a large pool which was about four or five acres in size, and both sides of the pool were connected to rivers where the water flowed with a gurgling sound. In the middle of the pool three springs rose bubbling over the surface for two or three feet, and according to local tradition they used to rise five or six feet high, but latter, after the pool was rebuilt, they became some how lower. The waters spouting out

第 三 章

話說衆人以爲天時尙早，王小玉還要唱一段；不知只是他妹子出來，敷衍幾句，就收場了。當時一闌而散。

老殘到了次日，想起一千兩銀子，放在寓中總不放心，卽到院前大街上，找了一家匯票號，——是個日昇昌字號，——匯了八百兩，寄江南徐州家裏去。自己却留了一百多兩銀子，向大街上，買了一匹繭紬，又買了一件大呢褂面子；拿回寓去；叫個成衣匠，做了一件袍褂，因時已九月，天氣雖和暖，倘然西北風一起，立刻便要穿棉了。吩咐成衣已畢。

吃了午飯，步出西門，先到趵突泉上，吃了一盃茶，這趵突泉是濟南府七十二泉中之第一泉，在泲池之中間，有四五畝地寬闊，兩頭均通溪河；池中流水，汨汨有聲，池子正中間，有三股大泉，從池底冒出，翻上水面，有二三尺高，據土人云：當年冒出有五尺高；後來修池，不知怎樣就低下去了。這三股水，均比

were thicker than barrels. On the north side of the pool was a temple of a local deity, and a matting roof was erected before it under which were five or six tables and about a dozen benches where travellers might buy tea to refresh themselves.

After Mr Decadent had had tea he went out of the back door, took several turns to the east, and found himself at the Golden Fountain College. He went in through the second gate, where there was a well beside which the old scholar used to entertain his friends. Going further and passing another gate there was a hall skirted in front and behind by the lake. There were many banana plants behind, and, although their leaves were withered, the vivid greens still stretched far away into the distance. In the northwest corner among the leaves was a square pool of about twenty square feet, and this was the Golden Fountain, the second among the famous fountains of the city; the four most important fountains being the Bubbling Fountain just mentioned, this Gold Thread Fountain, the Black Tiger Fountain outside the South Gate and the Pearl Fountain in the Governor's office.

According to tradition there was a gold thread in this fountain, but although Mr Decadent looked around for a long time he could not find even an iron thread, not to speak of a gold one. Just then, however, a scholar passed by, so Mr Decadent greeted him and asked him how the fountain came by that name. The scholar then took him by the hand and led him to the west side of the pool; there he bent down with head inclined sidewise, looked at the surface of the water, and said "Look, there is a line at the surface of the water like a floating thread, that makes a golden glitter,

甕桶倒出更粗。池子北面，是個呂祖殿。殿前高搭涼棚，設着五六張桌子，十幾條板凳買茶，以便遊人歇息。

老殘吃完茶，走出趵突泉後門，向東轉了幾個彎，尋着了金泉書院。進了二門，便是投轄井相傳卽是陳遵留客之處，再望西去，過一重門，卽是一所蝴蝶廳廳前廳後，均是湖水圍繞，廳後許多芭蕉，雖有幾片殘葉，尙是一碧無際。西北角裏，芭蕉叢中，有個方池，大約二丈見方，就是金線泉了，金線泉乃四大名泉第二。你道四大名泉，是那四個：就是剛纔說的趵突泉此刻的金線泉南門外的黑虎泉撫台衙中的珍珠泉。

這金線泉相傳水中有條金線。老殘左右看了半天，不要說金線紋，連鐵線紋沒有看見。幸而走過一個士子來，老殘便作揖請教這「金線」二字有無着落。那士子便拉了老殘的手，蹇到池子西面，彎了身，側着頭，向水面上睨着；說道：「你看那水面上一條線，彷彿游絲一樣，發出似赤金的光亮，在水面飄動。看見了沒有？」老殘也側了頭，定睛看去，停時說道：

floating on the top. Do you see it?" Mr Decadent also inclined his head and looked carefully, then said "Yes, I see it. I see it. Why is that?" Then he reflected and said "Perhaps there are two fountains beneath, striving against each other, so we see a line of light between them." The scholar said "This fountain has been mentioned in books for several hundred years. Could it be that these two fountains remained so long with their strength evenly matched?" Mr Decadent said "You see that line of light wavers to the right and to the left. That shows there must be some discrepancy in the strength of the fountains." The scholar understood and nodded. After they had talked, they bowed and separated.

Mr Decadent went out of the college to walk along the city wall, and when he passed the corner of the city he came to another street along which he walked in an easterly direction. There was a big river outside the South Gate, the water of which was so clear that one could see the fish swimming beneath and the weeds, over ten feet long, swaying in the moving stream, forming an interesting spectacle. As he walked he looked about him and saw some large rectangular pools in the south, and there were a number of women standing on the stones by the pool washing clothes. He passed further on and came to another big pool south of which there were some thatched huts, and when he passed in front of them he noticed that one was a tea-house. Mr Decadent then went into the tea-house and sat by the north window, and a waiter brought him a pot of tea. The tea pots were made of earthenware and resembled those of Yi Hsing, but they were local imitations.

Mr Decadent sat down and asked the waiter "I hear

『看見了，看見了，這是甚麼緣故呢？』想了一想道：『莫非底下兩股泉水，力量相敵，所以中間射出這一線來？』那士子道：『此泉見於著錄，好幾百年，難道這兩股水力，經久沒有強弱嗎？』老殘道：『你看這線會常左右擺動，這就是兩邊泉力不均的道理了。』那士子也點頭悟意。說完，彼此拱手各散。

老殘出了金泉書院，隨着四城而行，過了城角——仍是一條街市。——一直向東。這南城外好大一條城河，河裏泉水澄清，看得河底遊魚；水草芹苔，都有一丈多長，被那水攻得搖搖擺擺，煞是有趣。走着走着，又見南面有幾個大長方池；許多婦女，坐在池邊石上搗衣。再過去有一個大池，池南數間草房，走到前面，知是一個茶館。老殘便進了茶館，靠北窗坐下。就有一個茶房，泡了一壺茶來，茶壺都是宜興壺的樣子，却是本地仿造的。

老殘坐定，問茶房道：『聽說你們這裏有個黑虎泉可知道在甚麼地方？』那茶房笑道：『先生，你伏到窗臺上朝外看，不就是黑虎泉嗎？』老殘果然朝外一看，原來就在自己腳底下，有個石頭雕的老虎，頭約

you have a Black Tiger Fountain here. Do you know where it is?" The waiter smiled and said "Sir, if you go to the window and look out, isn't that the fountain?" Mr Decadent accordingly looked out and saw just beneath his feet a tiger carved in stone, with a head about two feet long and fifteen or sixteen inches wide. A fountain spurted out with great force from the mouth of the tiger, spouting right across to the other side of the pool, and then the water flowed south into the river outside the walls. He sat for a time until he saw the sun was going down, when he paid for the tea, walked slowly through the South Gate and returned to his hotel.

The next day he felt he had done enough sight-seeing, so he went on the street with his clapper. He passed the Governor's yamen and in an alley on the west came to a middle-sized house, the gate of which faced south; while a piece of red paper pasted outside the gate bore the words "Mr Kao's house." A thin-faced man stood in front of the gate, wearing a purple silk padded coat and holding a water-pipe, looking much concerned. When he saw Mr Decadent he called out to him, "Sir, can you cure dyptheria?" Mr Decadent said "I know something about it" and the other said "Please come in." He went inside the big gate and turned to the west where there were three large chambers, elegantly furnished with scrolls and paintings by contemporary scholars. In the middle there was a big scroll with a painting of a human figure, like someone moving in the wind, for the gown was billowing in the gale. The lines were excellently done, and on it was written "Mighty Wind" in good caligraphy.

They sat down and asked each other's names. That

二尺餘長，倒有尺五六寸寬徑，從那老虎口中噴出一股泉來，力量很大；從池子這裏，直冲到池子那面，然後轉到兩邊，流入城河去了。坐了片刻，看那夕陽漸漸西下的意思，遂付了茶錢，緩步進了南門回寓。

到了次日，覺得游興已足，就拿了串鈴，到街上去混混。蹺過撫臺門口，望西一條衙衙口，有所中等房子，朝南大門，門上貼了「高公館」三字紅條。門前站了一個瘦長臉的人；穿了件紫綾熟羅棉大襖，手裏捧着白銅水烟袋，面帶愁容。看見老殘，喚道：『先生你會看喉嚨嗎？』老殘答道：『略懂得一二分。』那人便說：『請裏面坐。』

進了大門，望西一拐，便是三間大廳，鋪設也還雅緻。兩邊字畫，多半是時下名人的筆墨。只有中間掛着一幅中堂，只畫了一個人物，彷彿似「列子御風」的形狀；衣服冠帶，均被風吹起，筆力甚是雄健。上題着：「大風張風」四字，也寫得極好。

坐定彼此問過姓名，原來這人是江蘇人，號紹殷，充當撫院內文案差使。他說：『有個小妾，害了喉蛾，已經五天，今日滴水不能進了。請先生診視，有救

man was a native of Kiangsu, called Kao Shao-yin, a clerk in the Governor's yamen. He said "My concubine is suffering from dyptheria. She has had it for five days and today she cannot even swallow water. I hope you will see whether she can still be cured." "I cannot tell until I see" said Mr Decadent; so Mr Kao ordered a servant to tell the people in the inner chamber that the doctor had come. Mr Decadent then went with him through the second gate where he saw three more rooms, and when they passed the hall a maid-servant held aside the screen of the western chamber and said "Please come in." He went in by the western wall and on the north side there was a big bed with a painted gauze net, and on the west side, in front of the bed, a small table with two stools.

Mr Kao asked him to sit on a stool in front of the bed. A hand appeared from beneath the net, and the maid-servant put a few books beneath it to support it; after which Mr Decadent felt the pulse first of one hand and then of the other. He said "The pulse is heavy. There is heat pressed by chill, which cannot come out: thus it has become serious. I would like to see the throat." Mr Kao then opened the netting, and he saw a woman of about twenty years old, whose face was very flushed and who looked extremely weak, Mr Kao lifted her up to face the light from the window, and Mr Decadent looked down her throat and found it swollen and practically closed up, besides being much inflamed. After he had examined it he said to Mr Kao "It was not a serious sickness, simply a slight hot humour; but the doctors pressed it down with chilly medicine so that the hot humour could not come out, also it is because she usually loses her temper. Now you only need

沒有？」老殘道：『須看了病，方好說話。』

當時高公，即叫家人到上房照應一聲，說有先生來看病。隨後就同着進了二門，即是三間上房。進得堂屋，有老媽子掀起西房的門簾，說聲請裏面坐。走進房門，貼西牆靠北一張大牀，牀上掛着印花夏布帳子，牀前靠西放了一張半桌，兩張杌凳。

高公讓老殘牀前凳上坐下。帳子裏伸出一隻手來，老媽子拿了幾本書墊在手下。診了一隻，又換一隻。老殘道：『兩手脈沉，是火被寒氣逼住，不得出來；所以越過越重。請看一看喉嚨。』高公便將帳子打開，看那婦人約有二十歲光景，面上通紅，甚爲委頓的樣子。高公將他輕輕扶起，對着窗子的亮光。老殘低頭看了一看，兩邊腫的已將要合縫了；顏色淡紅，看過，對高公道：『這病本不甚重，原起只是一點火，被醫住用苦寒藥一逼，火不得發；兼之平常肝氣易動的緣故。祇須喫兩劑清涼發散藥就好了。』又在自己藥囊內。取出一個藥瓶。一支喉槍，替他吹了兩口。

a couple of prescriptions of some medicine to cause perspiration, and then she will be all right." Then he took from his medicine case a medicine bottle and blow-pipe, and blew some medicine down her throat.

After that they returned to the sitting room and Mr Decadent wrote a prescription and gave it to Mr Kao. The latter said "This is excellent. How many times should she take it?" Mr Decadent said "Twice today. I shall come back tomorrow." Mr Kao said "May I ask how much the fee is?" Mr Decadent said "In my work I have no fixed fee. If I cure the lady's illness, should I be hungry at any time I will ask you for a bowl of rice, and should I be unable to go away I will ask you for travelling expenses, and that will be enough." "In that case" said Mr Kao "I shall thank you altogether when she is cured. But may I ask where you stay? Then if there is any need I can send people to look for you." "In Commissioner's Road, High Promotion Hotel" said Mr Decadent, and after saying this he went away.

Since then he called every day, and in less than a week the lady was cured and regained normal health. Mr Kao was overjoyed and sent him eight taels of silver; he also prepared a feast in the Northern Pillar Restaurant, and invited some of his colleagues in order to spread Mr Decadent's fame. Then one man told ten, ten men told a hundred, until there were officials and secretaries coming to invite him with sedan-chairs, and he had scarcely a moment's leisure.

One day when he had been invited to dine in the same restaurant by an official, the man sitting his right said "Yu Hsien is going to be the District Governor of Tsaochow."

回到廳房，開了個藥方，方子開畢，送了過去。高公道：『高明得極，不知喫幾帖呢？』老殘道：『今日喫兩帖，明日再來覆診，』高公又問：『診金請教幾何？』老殘道：『鄙人行道，沒有一定的診資；果然醫好了姨太太的病，等我那肚子飢時，賞盃飯喫，走不動時給幾個盤纏儘够了』。高公道：『既如此說，病好一總酬謝罷！請問貴寓何處？倘有變動，可以着人來請。』老殘道：『在布政司街高陞店。』說畢，辭出。

從此天天來請，不過三五天，病勢漸退，已經同常人一樣。高公歡喜得了不得，送了八兩銀子謝儀，又在北柱樓辦了一席酒，邀請文案上同事作陪；也是個揄揚的意思。誰知一傳十，十傳百，官幕兩途，拿轎子來接的，漸漸有日不暇接之勢。

那日又在北柱樓吃飯是個候補道請的；席上右邊上首一個人說道：『玉佐臣要補曹州府了。』左邊下首緊靠老殘的一個人說道：『他的班次甚遠，怎樣會補缺呢？』右邊的人道：『因為他辦強盜辦的好不到一年，有「路不拾遺」之風；宮保賞識非凡。前日有人

Mr Decadent's neighbour on the left said "He is not qualified for that by a long way. How could he be given such a position?" The man on the right said "Because he knows how to deal with bandits. After one year of his administration people do not dare pick things up from the roadside. The Provincial Governor thinks a great deal of him. The other day somebody said to the Provincial Governor" Once I passed through a certain village in Tsaochow and saw a blue cloth wrapper left by the roadside, which no one dared to pick up. When I asked the local people to whom it belonged and why nobody would pick it up, they said Last night somebody left it here! 'Why didn't you take it?' I asked, but they all smiled and shook their heads, saying 'If anyone were to pick it up, his whole family would be doomed.' Thus it seems that the ancient saying has come true that 'There was nothing taken from the roadside' and we are achieving that today. "When the Governor heard this he was very pleased, so he wrote a memorandum specially recommending him."

The man on the left said "Mr Yu is very able, but he is too cruel. In less than one year's time he condemned over two thousand men to death in the pillory. Could there have been no injustice there?" The man beside him said "It goes without saying there must have been some innocent people." The man on the right said "The government of a cruel officer always appears impressive from without. Think of the case of Mr Ch'ang, the Skinner, who was governor of Tuichow and who was also like that. Things reached a state when people stole sidelong glances at him." "Another man said "It is true that Mr Yu is cruel; but the people of Tsaochow are really wretches. The year that I was

對宮保說：「曾走曹州某鄉莊過，親見一個藍布包袱，棄在路旁，無人敢拾，某就問土人：這包袱是誰的？爲何無人收拾？土人道：昨夜裏不知何人，將包袱放在這裏。某問：你爲何不拾去呢？都笑着搖搖頭道：拾了，俺還有一家兒性命嗎？如此可見「路不拾遺，」古人竟不是欺人的，今日也竟做到了。」官保聽着，非常喜歡。所以打疊專摺保他的。」

左邊的人又道：『佐臣人是能幹的，可惜太殘忍些！不到一年，站籠站死兩千多人，難道沒有冤枉的嗎？』旁邊一人道：『冤枉一定有的，自無庸說。』右邊的人道：『大凡酷吏的政治，外面都是好看的。諸君記得常剝皮做兗州府時，何嘗不是這樣，纔做的「人人側目而視」就完了。』

又一人道：『佐臣的酷虐，誠然是酷虐。然曹州府的民情，實在可恨。那年兄弟做曹州府的時候，幾乎無一天無盜案，養了二百名小隊，像那不捕鼠的貓兒一樣，毫無用處。及至各縣捕快捉來的強盜，不是老實鄉民，就是被強盜脅去看守驛馬挑担子的人；至

governor there, there was not a day without a case of robbery. I kept two hundred troops, but they were like cats who do not catch rats-completely useless. When the bailiffs caught robbers they were either honest citizens or else people forced by robbers to hold their horses or carry their booty; while as for real robbers, they did not catch one in a hundred. Now Mr Yu has acted like lightning and put an end to all robbery. Compared with him I felt rather ashamed." The man on the left said "In my foolish opinion it is still better to kill less people. Although he is famous now, he will not escape retribution in future." After he had spoken they said "We have had enough wine. Please give us rice." When the meal was ended they all dispersed.

After another day Mr Decadent had nothing to do and was sitting idly in his room when a blue felt sedan-chair stopped by the door, and a man came in shouting "Is Mr T'ieh at home?" Mr Decadent saw that Mr Kao had come, and quickly went out to welcome him saying "Yes, yes. Please come in. Only our place is too humble and dirty for you." Mr Kao said "Not at all." Then they passed through the second gate where there were two chambers facing east. Inside his chamber on the eastern side there was a brick bed with bedding on it, on the north side a square table and two chairs, and on the west side two small bamboo cases. On the table were several books, one small ink stone, a few pens and a red ink case.

When Mr Decadent had asked him to sit down in the seat of honour Mr Kao casually picked up a book and looked at it, then exclaimed in surprise "Where did you get this Sung dynasty edition of Chuang Tze? This edition vanished from the world long ago. Even those scholars like Mr Chi

於真強盜，一百個中，也選不出一個來，現在被玉佐臣雷厲風行的一辦，盜案竟自沒有了。相形之下，兄弟實在慚愧得很！」左邊的人道：「依兄弟愚見，還是少殺人爲是。此人雖名震一時，將來的果報也不爽。」說完，大家說：「酒也够了，賜飯罷。」飯畢各散。

過了一日，老殘無事，在寓中閒坐，忽見門口一乘藍呢轎歇下，進來一個人，口中喊道：「鐵先生在家麼？」老殘一看，便是高紹般，趕忙迎出，說道：「在，在。請房裏坐。只是地方卑污，屈駕得很。」紹般說：「說那裏話。」一同走進二門內，朝東兩間廂房，房裏靠南一張氈炕，炕上鋪着被褥。北面一張方桌，兩張椅子。西面放着兩隻小小竹箱。桌上擺列着幾本書，一方小硯，幾枝筆；又有一個印色盒子。

老殘請他上首坐了。他隨手揭書來，細細一看，驚訝道：「這部宋版張君房刻本的莊子，從那裏得來？此書世上久不見了。季滄葦黃丕烈諸人，俱未見過，要算希世之寶呢！」老殘道：「不過先人遺下的幾本

and Mr Huang have never seen a copy like this, It is priceless. "Mr Decadent said" These are only some old books left by my father. They aren't worth anything. I just carry them with me on my travels to amuse myself by reading them like novels. It's not worth mentioning." Then Mr Kao looked round and saw that the other book was the poems of T'ao Ch'ien, copied by hand in the Sung dynasty by the poet Su Tung-p'o. It was the original manuscript from which Mao Tze-chin had printed his edition. Mr Kao marvelled, and asked casually "If you belong to a scholar's family, why don't you work for officialdom instead of pursuing this obscure profession? Although it is said 'Wealth and nobility are like floating clouds', such an attitude is rather too eccentric. "Mr Decadent said" You are really over estimating me when you speak like that. It is not that I am not interested in officialdom, but my temperament is rather lazy and unsuited to worldly affairs. Moreover, the proverb says 'Those who climb high, will fall heavily'. I do not climb because I do not want to fall down too heavily."

Mr Kao said "Yesterday evening when I was dining at the governor's the provincial governor remarked that among our secretaries we have many scholars, and all those we knew were gathered there. But a certain Mr Yao at the same table said 'At the moment there is a scholar in Tsinan whom you have overlooked.' The Governor at once asked "Who is that?" and Mr Yao then told him how excellent were your scholarship and character, and how profound your understanding of human nature and experience in world affairs. The Governor scratched his ear and chin with pleasure and asked me to send you a formal invitation immediately. But I said "It may not be suitable for him,

破書，又不值錢；隨便帶在行篋，解解悶兒，當小說看罷了，何足掛齒！」再望下翻，是一本蘇東坡手寫的陶詩，就是毛子晉仿刻的祖本。紹殷再三贊歎不絕，隨便問道：「先生本是科第世家，爲何不在功名上講求，却操此冷業？雖說富貴浮雲，未免太高尙了罷！」老殘嘆道：「足下以「高尙」二字許我，實過獎了。鄙人並非無志功名：一則性情過於疏放，不合時宜；二則俗說：「攀得高，跌得重；」不相攀高，是想跌輕些兒呢！」

紹殷道：「昨晚在裏頭吃便飯，宮保談起幕府人才濟濟，凡有所聞，無不羅致於此了。同坐姚雲翁便道：「目下就有一個人在此，宮保並未羅致。」宮保急問道：「是誰？」姚雲翁就將閣下學問怎樣，品行怎樣，而又通達人情，熟諳世務，怎樣怎樣，說得宮保抓耳撓頭，十分歡喜。宮保就叫兄弟立刻寫個內文案札子送來；那是兄弟答道：「這樣恐不妥當，此人既非候補，又非投效，且還不知他有甚麼功名，札子不甚好下。」宮保說：「那麼就下個關書去請。」兄弟說：

for he has not passed the examination nor come to us specially, and we know nothing of his past qualifications; so it is rather difficult." The Governor said "Then you send him a private invitation" and I said "If you were to ask him to come to cure sickness, he would come immediately; but if you want him to join you as a secretary, it is not certain whether he will or not. You will have to ask him first. "Good, You find out tomorrow. Then bring him to see me. "So I came specially to discuss it with you. Would you care to come to the office today to see the Governor?"

Mr Decadent said "That's all right. Only to see the Governor one has to wear ceremonial dress, and I am not used to it. Could I go in ordinary clothes?" "Of course" said Mr Kao. "We will go presently, and you can wait in my room; then when the Governor comes out in the afternoon we shall call on him in his office." Then he called a sedan-chair, and Mr Decadent, wearing informal dress, went with Mr Kao to the Governor's yamen. The Provincial Governor's yamen in Shantung was the former mansion of Prince Ch'i of the Ming dynasty, and in many places the old names were still retained; thus when you passed through the third hall it was called the Palace Gate. Adjoining it was Mr Kao's office, and facing it the Governor's office. Mr Decadent sat down in Mr Kao's room for a little while, and then the Governor came out, a man of gigantic stature and benevolent appearance. When Mr Kao saw him he went up and said a few words to him in a low voice. Governor Chang then called out "Please come over, please come over." and an attendant officer cried out "His Honour wishes to see Mr T'ieh." Mr Decadent then went and stood before the governor, the governor said "Delighted

「若要請他看病，那是一請就到的；若要招致幕府，不知他願意不願意。須先問他一聲纔好。」宮保說。

「很好，你明日就去探探口氣，你就同了他來見我一見。」爲此兄弟今日特來與閣下商議，可否今日同到裏面見宮保一見？」

老殘道：「那也沒有甚麼不可。只是見宮保須要冠帶，我却裝不慣；能便衣相見就好。」紹殷道：「自然便衣。稍停一刻，我們就去；你到我書房裏坐等，宮保午後從裏邊下來，我們就在簽押房裏見了。」說着喊了一乘轎子，老殘穿着隨身衣服，同高紹殷進了撫署。

原來這山東撫署，是明朝的齊王府，故許多地方，仍用舊名。進了三堂，就叫宮門口；旁邊就是高紹殷的書房。對面便是宮保的簽押房。方到紹殷書房坐下，不到半時，只見宮保從裏面出來。身體甚是魁梧，相貌却還仁厚，高紹殷看見，立刻迎上前去，低低說了幾句，只聽張宮保連聲叫道：「請過來！請過來！」便有個差官連聲喊道：「宮保請鐵老爺！」老殘連忙走

to meet you". Then he stretched over his hand and inclined his body, saying "Please come in." The attendant officer had already drawn back the screen.

Mr Decadent went into the room and bowed deeply. The Governor asked him to sit in the seat of honour on the redwood bed, and Mr Kao sat facing him while a square table was placed between them. The Governor sat down and said "I have heard that your learning and talent are extraordinary. I am a man of little talent, but by the grace of His Sacred Majesty I have been given this high position. In other provinces it is only necessary to discharge the routine work efficiently, but in our province there is the river problem which is a matter of grave concern. In this matter I myself am powerless, but whenever I hear of talented people I always try to invite them, in order to profit by their wisdom. If there is something you have noticed and you could instruct me a little, I should be most grateful.

Mr Decadent said "Every one praises your good administration, that goes without saying. Regarding the river problem, whenever I hear people discussing it, they all seem to be following the ancient policy of Chia Jang, who said that we should not contend with the river." "Isn't that right?" asked the Governor. "You see how broad the river is in Honan, and how narrow the river bed is here." Mr Decadent said "It is not so. If the river bed is too narrow to contain all the water, that is only during those days when the water rises; but the rest of the time the water is slow, and that is why mud usually gathers here. You know Chia Jang was only able to write good essays, but he never actually worked at river conservancy. Some hundred years

來，向張宮保對面一站。宮保道：『久慕得很！』用手一伸，腰一阿，說：『請裏面坐。』差官早將軟簾打起。

老殘進了房門，深深作了個揖。宮保讓在紅木炕上首坐下。紹殷對面相陪，另外搬了一張方杌凳，在兩人中間，宮保坐了。便問道：『聽說補殘先生學問經濟，都出衆的很？兄弟以不學之資，聖恩叫我做這封疆大吏。別省不過盡心吏治就完了，本省有個河工，實在難辦！所以兄弟沒有別的法子。——但凡聞有奇才異能之士，都想請來，也是集思廣益的意思。倘有見到的所在，能指教一二，那就受賜得多了。』

老殘道：『宮保的政聲，有口皆碑，那是沒有得說的了。只是河工一事，聽得外邊議論皆是賈讓之策，主張不與河爭地的。』宮保道：『原是什么呢。你看河南的河面寬多，此地的河面多窄呢？』老殘道：『不是這麼說。河面窄，容不下，只有伏汛幾十天；其餘的時候，水力甚輕，沙所以易淤。要知賈讓只是文章做得好，他也沒有辦過河工。賈讓之後，不到一百年，就有

after him there was another man called Wang Ching, who used the method handed down by Yu, the pacifier of the Flood. He believed in a policy of dredging and deepening, just the reverse of Chia's saying. For over a thousand years after he dealt with the river, there was no flood. P'an Chi-hsun of the Ming dynasty and Ching Wen-hsiang of our dynasty also adopted his plan and thereby won great fame. I suppose you know of it too." "What policy did Wang Ching follow?" asked the Governor, and Mr Decadent said "He thought out his scheme from the record saying that Yu divided the river into nine tributaries and joined the streams together, basing his policy on the two words 'dividing' and 'uniting'. In the later Han dynasty history it is only mentioned that he had a dike every three miles to regulate the water. As for the details, they are too many to enumerate in a short time, but later I will write a memorandum for you."

When the Governor heard this he was very pleased, and said to Mr Kao "You tell them quickly to clear the three rooms in the south, and ask Mr T'ieh to move into our yamen, so that I can receive his instructions." Mr Decadent said "I greatly appreciate the honour you are showing me, but I have a relative in Tsaochow whom I wish to visit, moreover I have heard people discuss Mr Yu's administration, and I would like to go and find out how good it is. After I return from Tsaochow I shall come to receive your instructions." The Governor was somewhat disappointed, but after speaking Mr Decadent took his leave, going out of the yamen with Mr Kao to return to the hotel. If you want to know whether Mr Decadent really went to Tsaochow or not, you must read the next chapter.

個王景出來了。他治河的法子，乃是從大禹一脈下來的，專主禹抑洪水的「抑」字。與那賈讓之說法，正相反背。自他治過之後，一千多年，沒有河患。明朝潘季馴，本朝靳文襄，皆略仿其意，遂享盛名。宮保想必也是知道的？」宮保道：『王景是用何法子呢？』老殘道：『他是從「播爲九河，同爲逆河，」「播」「同」兩字上悟出來的。後漢書上，也只有「十里立一水門，令更相迴注」兩句話。至於其中曲折，亦非傾蓋之間所能道盡，容慢慢的做個說帖呈覽便了。』

張宮保聽了，甚爲喜歡。向紹殷道：『你叫他們趕緊把那南書房三間收拾，只便請鐵先生搬到衙門裏來住罷，以便隨時領教。』老殘道：『宮保雅愛，甚爲感激。但是目下有個親戚在曹州府住，打算去探望一遭；並且風聞玉守的政聲，也要去考察考察，究竟是何等樣人。等鄙人從曹州回來，再領宮保的教罷。』宮保神色甚爲快快。

說完，老殘卽告辭，同紹殷出了衙門，各自回去。未知老殘究竟是到曹州與否，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER IV.

IT is said that when Mr Decadent came out of the Governor's yamen he left his sedan-chair, and walked about on the streets enjoying himself for a little, spending some time in the curio shops and only returning to the hotel in the evening. The manager at once came to his room to congratulate him, making Mr Decadent feel quite bewildered. The manager said "I just heard that Mr Kao himself came to invite you, saying that the Governor wanted to see you, and you went to the yamen together. You are really in luck. Mr Li and Mr Chang here have both got letters of introduction from the Capital to see the Governor, but they went four or five times and were not received, and on the rare occasions that they saw him, they would be in a bad temper afterwards, cursing people and wanting to take their cards to send people to the magistrate to be punished. What great face you must have if the Governor asks the secretary to invite you for a talk like this. You will certainly be given a job immediately. So of course I congratulate you."

Mr Decadent said "Not at all. They have been fooling you. I cured somebody's illness in Mr Kao's family, and I mentioned to him that there was a Pearl Fountain in the Governor's yamen, at which I wanted to have a look. So today when Mr Kao had leisure he asked me to go there to see the fountain. It was not the Governor asking for me." "I know it" said the manager "Don't try to deceive me."

第 四 章

話說老殘從撫署出來，即將轎子辭去，步行在街上游玩了一會兒；又在古玩店裏盤桓些時，傍晚回到店裏。店裏掌櫃的連忙跑進屋來說聲恭喜。老殘茫然不知道是何事。掌櫃的道：『我適纔聽說，院上高大老爺，親自來請你老，說是撫臺要想見你老，因此一路進衙門的，你老真好造化。上房一個李老爺，一個張老爺，都拿着京城裏的信去見撫臺，三次五次的見不着；偶然見着回把，這就要鬧脾氣罵人，動不動還要拿片子送入到縣裏去辦。像你老這樣，撫臺央出文案老爺來請進去談談，這面子多麼大，那怕不是立刻就有差使的嗎？怎麼樣不給你老道喜呢。』

老殘道：『沒有的事，你聽他們胡說呢，高大老爺是我替他家醫治了病，我說撫臺衙門裏有個珍珠泉，可能引我們去見識見識；所以昨日高大老爺偶然得空，來約我看泉水的。那裏有撫臺有請我的話。』掌櫃的道：『我知道的，你老別騙我。先前高大老爺

When Mr Kao was here I heard his servant say When the Gevornor went in to have lunch he passed Mr Kao's room and oalled out to him 'After you have finished eating, you go immediately to invite Mr T'ieh. If you go late he may be out, and you may not see him today'. "Mr Decadent laughed and said" Don't you believe such nonsense. Its not true. "The manager said" Don't worry, I'm not asking you to lend me money."

Then they heard semone outside shouting "Where is the manager?" The manger hastily went out and saw a man wearing a cap with a bright sapphire button and feather behind, dressed in soft boots, a purple felt gown and sky-blue jacket. In one hand he held a lantern and in the other a red visiting card, and he shouted "Where is the manager?" "Here I am! Here I am!" said the manager. "What is it?" "Is Mr T'ieh staying here?" asked the man, and the manager said "Yes, yes." "He is staying in the east chamber, I will lead the way." When he came in the manager pointed to Mr Decadent and said "This is Mr T'ieh." The other went forward and knelt on one knee, presenting the card in his hand saying "His Honour presents his respects to Mr T'ieh. Tonight because the Examiner has asked him to dinner he could not ask you to stay in the yamen, so he told the kitchen quickly to prepare a feast and send it here immediately, His Honour says the feast is poor, and he hopes Mr T'ieh will not be offended." Then he turned back and ordered "Bring in the feast." Two men behind brought in a three-layered hamper, and when the cover was removed they saw that the hamper was rectangular, the first layer containing small dishes, the second layer some big dishes including birds nest and sharks

在這裏說話的時候，我聽他管家說，撫臺進去喫飯，走從高大老爺房門口過，還讓說你趕緊喫過飯，就去約那個鐵公來哪，去遲，恐怕他出門，今兒就見不着了。』老殘笑道：『你別信他們胡謔沒有的事。』掌櫃的道：『你老放心，我不問你借錢。』

只聽外邊大讓：『掌櫃的在那兒呢？』掌櫃慌忙跑出去，只見一個人，戴了亮藍頂子，拖着花翎；穿了一隻抓地虎靴子，紫呢夾袍，天青哈喇馬褂；一手提着燈籠，一手拿了個雙紅名帖，嘴裏喊：『掌櫃的呢！』掌櫃連說：『在這兒，在這兒！你老啥事？』那人道：『你這兒有位鐵老爺嗎？』掌櫃的道：『不錯，不錯，在這東廂房裏住着呢。我引你去。』

兩人走進來，掌櫃指着老殘道：『這就是鐵老爺。』那人趕了一步，進前請了一個安，舉起手中帖子，口中說道：『宮保說請鐵老爺的安，今晚因學臺請喫飯，沒有留鐵老爺在衙門裏喫飯；所以叫廚房裏趕緊辦了一棹酒席，叫立刻送過來，宮保說不中吃的，請鐵老爺包涵些！』那人回頭道：『把酒席擡上來！』那後邊的兩個人，擡着一個三層的長方抬盒。揭了蓋

fin, and the third layer a whole sucking pig, one duck and two plates of cakes. When they were opened and seen, that man called out "Manager!" The manager was standing with the servants, looking dazed, but when he heard the shout he quickly answered "Yes, Sir." That man said "See that they are taken to the kitchen."

Mr Decadent quickly said "I am sorry to have caused the Governor so much trouble" and asked that man to go into the room to have a cup of tea, but he would not. Then Mr Decadent insisted, so he entered the room and sat down on a stool on the lower side, but when invited to sit on the bed he declined emphatically. Mr Decadent took the pot and poured out a cup of tea and that man hastily stood up, knelt on one knee and thanked him, saying "His Honour has ordered the Southern Library to be cleared immediately, and asks Mr T'ieh to move in tomorrow or the next day. If you have any orders in future just call me at the police station, and I shall place myself at your disposal." Mr Decadent said "You are too polite." Then that man stood up, knelt on one knee and said "I must ask leave to go back to the yamen to report. I shall be obliged if you will give me your card." Mr Decadent told the servant to give two strings of coins to the hamper-carrier, and at the same time wrote a receipt and saw that man out. The latter begged him not to go out, but he still escorted him out of the gate and saw him mount his horse before he came back.

When Mr Decadent came back from the gate the manager approached him with a broad smile and said "Do you still want to deceive me? Isn't that the Governor's feast? The one who came just now, I hear, is Mr Ho of the police station. He is a lieutenant-general. During the

子，頭層是碟子小盃，第二層是燕窩魚翅等類大盃，第三層是一個燒小豬，一隻鴨子，還有二碟點心。打開看過，那人就叫：『掌櫃的呢？』這時掌櫃同茶房等人站在旁邊，久已看厭了。聽得叫喚，忙應道：『啥事？』那人道：『你招呼着送到廚房裏去。』

老殘忙道：『宮保這樣費心，是不敢當的。』一面讓那人房裏去坐坐喫茶，那人再三不肯。老殘固讓，那人纔進房，在下首一個杌子上坐下。讓他上炕，死也不肯。老殘拿茶壺，替他倒了盃茶，那人忙立起身，請了個安，道謝。因說道：『聽宮保吩咐，趕緊打掃南書房院子，請鐵老爺明後天進去住呢。將來有甚麼差遣，只管到武捕巡房呼喚一聲，就過來伺候的。』老殘道：『豈敢，豈敢。』那人便站起來，又請了個安，說：『告辭了，要回衙消局，請賞個名片。』老殘一面叫茶房來給了挑盒子的兩吊錢；一面寫了個領謝帖子，送那人出去。那人再三固讓，老殘仍送出大門，看那人上馬去了方回。

老殘從門口回來，掌櫃的笑迷迷的迎着說道：『你老還要騙我，這不是撫臺大人送了酒席來了嗎？剛纔來的，我聽說是武捕巡赫大老爺，他是個參將

last two years the Governor has sent feast to guests of ours on several occasions, but they were only ordinary feasts, and he only sent a policeman. This is the first time we have had such an honour" Mr Decadent said "Never mind ordinary or extraordinary, what shall we do about this feast?"

The manager said "You can either divide it to give to a few good friends, or write an invitation this evening for some honoured guests and take it to the lake tomorrow to eat. Since this feast comes from the Governor it is more precious than gold." Mr Decadent laughed and said "If it is more precious than gold, would anybody like to buy it from me? I will sell it for some gold to pay for my board and lodging." The manager said "That does not matter. I am not afraid about that. It will be paid by other people. If you don't believe me, just wait and see if my words are true or not." Mr Decadent said "All right. But regarding this feast, I think I had better give it to you to invite your guests. I don't want to eat such rich food."

They discussed the question for a while and finally decided that Mr Decadent should act as host, and invite all the guests in the hotel to the outside room. Mr Li and Mr Chang who stayed there were usually very haughty; but today, having seen how honoured he was by the Governor, they had thought of nothing but how to make friends with him in order that he might recommend them. Now that Mr Decadent wanted to borrow their sitting room to invite the hotel visitors, they would naturally be honoured guests, and so they were delighted. Thus during the feast they praised Mr Decadent until his flesh crept, but he could do nothing, and had to make polite conversation with them. So with great difficulty he got through the feast and they

呢！這二年裏住在俺店裏的客，撫臺也常有送酒席來的，都不過是尋常酒席，差個戈什來就是了。像這樣尊重，俺這裏是頭一回呢！』老殘道：『那也不必管他，尋常也好，異常也好；只是這桌菜怎樣銷法呢？』

掌櫃的道：『或者分送幾個至好朋友；或者今晚趕寫一個帖子，請幾位體面客，明兒帶到大明湖上去吃。撫臺送的，比金子買的還榮耀得多呢！』老殘笑道：『既是比金子買的還要榮耀，可有人要買，我就賣他兩把金子來，抵還你的房飯錢罷。』掌櫃的道：『別忙。你老房飯錢，我很不怕，自有人來替你開發；你老不信，試試我的話，看靈不靈。』老殘道：『管他怎麼呢。只是今晚這桌菜，依我看，倒是轉送了你去請客罷，我很不願意喫這怪膩的東西。』

二人講了些時，仍是老殘請客，就將這本店的住客，都請到上房外間裏去。這上房住的一個姓李一個姓張本是極倨傲的。今日見撫臺如此契重，正在想法聯絡聯絡，以爲託請謀保舉地步；却遇老殘借他的外間請本店的人，自然是他二人上坐，歡喜的無可如何。所以這一席間，將個老殘恭維得渾身難受，十分沒法，也只好敷衍幾句。好容易一席酒吃完，各自散去。

all dispersed.

Then this Mr Chang and Mr Li went to his room to thank him again afterwards, and talked one after the other, praising him for a long time. Mr Li said "You can buy ranks, first one this year and then another next spring; then in the autumn when you go to the capital you will get a magistracy of the T'ai Wu district. This is very easy." "Mr Chang said" Mr Li here is the most wealthy man in Tientsin; and if you can help him to get recommended, he will lend you the money for buying the rank. Then after you have got your lucrative post, you can pay him back." Mr Decadent said" I am very lucky to be advised by you, but at the moment I am not anxious to be an official; should I want to be an official in future, I shall come to you to beg your favour," The two men then pleaded with him again and went back to their rooms to rest. Mr Decadent thought "I meant formerly to stay a few days, but judging by this it seems such entanglements will become more and more. As the proverb says 'Out of thirty-six strategies, the best is to fly.'" Accordingly that evening he wrote a letter asking Mr Kao to thank the Governor for his kindness, and before daybreak he paid the bill, hired a cart and left the city. ☞

After he left the West Gate he went north for six miles to a small town called Lo K'ou. Before the Yellow River joined the Ta Tsin River, all the seventy two streams of the city had flowed into the river here, and it used to be a very prosperous place; but since the Yellow River changed its course, only one tenth of the former number of cargo-boats passed there. When Mr Decadent reached this town, he hired a small boat to go to the harbour of Tsaochow

那知這張李二公，又親自到廂房裏來道謝，一替一句又奉承了半日。姓李的道：『老兄可以捐個同知，今年隨捐一個過班，明年春間大案，又是一個過班；秋天引見，就可得濟東泰武臨道，先署後補，是意中事。』姓張的道：『李兄是天津的首富，如老兄可以照應他得兩個保舉，這捐官之費，李兄可以拿出奉借；等老兄得了優差，再還不遲。』老殘道：『承兩位過愛，兄弟總算有造化的了，只是目下尚無出山之志，將來如要出山，再來奉懇。』兩人又力勸了一回，各自回房安寢。

老殘心裏想道：『本想再爲盤桓兩天，看這光景，恐無謂的糾纏，要越逼越緊了。三十六計，走爲上計。』當夜遂寫了一封書，託高紹殷代謝張宮保的厚誼；天未明，即將店帳算清楚，雇了一輛二把手的小車，就出城去了。

出濟南府西門，北行十八里，有個鎮市，名叫雒口。當初黃河未併大清河的時候，凡城裏的七十二泉泉水，皆從此地入河，本是個極繁盛的所在。自從黃河併了，雖仍有貨船來往，究竟不過十分之一二，差得遠了。老殘到了雒口雇了一隻小船，講明逆流送到

district upstream, and as soon as he boarded the boat he paid two strings of coins to the boatman to buy firewood and rice. Luckily there was a south-east wind that day, and when the sail was hoisted the boat was carried by the wind all the way. By the time the sun set behind the mountains they reached Ch'i Ho district where the boat moored and stopped. The next evening the boat stopped at P'ing Ying and the third day at Shou Chang, while on the fourth day they reached the Tung Family Harbour. He spent that night on the boat and at day-break the next day he paid the bill and moved his baggage to an inn where he stayed.

This Tung Family Harbour lay on the main way between Tsaochow and Ta Ming so it had several large cart stands. This inn was called the Tung Family Inn, and the manager, whose surname was Tung, was over sixty, and people called him Old Tung. He had only one assistant whose name was Wang. When Mr Decadent reached the inn it would have been natural for him to hire a cart immediately to go to Tsaochow; but because he wanted to find out more about the administration of District Governor Yu along the road, he travelled slowly to suit his purpose. It was nearly noon and even the latest risers among the travellers at the inn had already gone, so the assistant was clearing the rooms and the manager was making up the accounts, sitting comfortably outside the door. Mr Decadent also sat down on the bench outside the door, and said to Old Tung "I heard your Governor here is very capable in dealing with robbers. Just how good is he?" Old Tung sighed and said "The Governor is an uncorrupted officer and he works with efficiency; only he is a little too relentless. In the beginning he caught a few robbers, but later the robbers learnt hi-

曹州府屬董家口下船先付了兩吊錢，船家買點柴米。却好本日是東南風，掛起帆來，呼呼的去了。走到太陽將要落山，已到了齊河縣城，拋錨住下。第二日住在平陰。第三日住在壽張。第四日便到了董家口；仍在船上住了一夜。天明開發船錢，將行李搬在董家口一個店裏住下。

這董家口本是曹州府到大名府的一條大道，故很有幾家車店。是家店就叫做董二房老店，掌櫃的姓董有六十多歲。人都叫他老董只有一個夥計，名叫王三，老殘住在店內，本該雇車就往曹州府去，因想沿路打聽那玉賢的政績，故緩緩起行，以便訪察。

這日有辰牌時候，店裏住客，連那起身極遲的，也都走了，店夥打掃房屋，掌櫃的帳已寫完，在門口閒坐。老殘也在門口長凳上坐下，向老董說道：『聽說你們這府裏的大人，辦盜案好的很，究竟是個甚麼情形？』那老董嘆口氣道：『玉大人官却是個清官，辦案也實在麻力，但只是手太辣些！初起還辦着幾個強盜，後來強盜摸着他的脾氣，這玉大人倒反做了強盜的兵器了。』老殘說『這話怎麼話呢。』

老董道：『說來話長。在我們此地西南角上，有

temperament and he became their weapon instead." "What do you mean by that?" asked Mr Decadent.

Old Tung said "It takes a lot of explaining. In the south west corner of our district there is a village called the Yu Family Village, where there are over two hundred families. There was a wealthy man in the village whose name was Yu Ch'ao-tung, who had two sons and one daughter. Both the sons were married and he had two grandsons, and his daughter was also married. This family was living in great comfort, but calamity overtook them. Last autumn the family was robbed, although actually they simply lost some dresses and trinkets only worth several hundred strings of coins. They reported it to the Governor, and after a very thorough investigation by him two minor robbers were caught, and several cloth garments recovered; but as for the robber chief, he had disappeared. Perhaps because of this arrest the robbers were angry. This year in spring they actually robbed some one within the city, and although the Governor acted like lightning, for several days not a single robber was caught. Then after a few days another family was robbed and after the robbery they even set fire to the house in broad daylight. Do you think the Governor would put up with that? Naturally he sent his mounted police in pursuit.

"But after the robbery the robbers left the city with torches and foreign rifles in their hands, so who dared stop them? They went out of the East Gate and after they had gone northwards for three or four miles the torches were extinguished. The Governor sent his mounted police in pursuit, and when they passed through the streets the watchmen told them the situation in detail, and the

個村莊，名叫于家屯。這于家屯，也有二百多戶人家。那莊上有個財主，叫于朝棟生了兩個兒子，一個女兒；兒子都娶了媳婦，養了兩個孫子，女兒也出了閣。這家人家過的日子，很爲安逸。不料禍事臨門；去年秋間，被強盜搶了一次，其實也不過丟些衣服首飾，所值不過幾百弔錢。這家就報了案，經這玉大人極力的嚴拏，居然也拏住了兩個爲從的強盜夥計，追出來的贓物不過幾件布衣服；那強盜頭子早已不知跑到那裏去了。

『誰知因這一拏，強盜結了冤仇。到了今年春天，那強盜竟在府城裏面搶了一家子。玉大人雷厲風行的幾天，也沒有拏着一個人。過了幾天，又搶了一家子，搶過之後，大明大白的放火。你想玉大人可能依呢？自然調起馬隊，追下來了。』

『那強盜搶過之後，打着火把出城，手裏拏着洋槍，誰敢上前攔阻。出了東門，望北走了十幾里地，火把就滅了。玉大人調了馬隊，走到街上，地保更夫，就將這情形詳細稟報。當時放馬追出了城，遠遠還看見強盜的火把，追了二三十里，看見前面又有火光，又帶着兩三聲槍響。玉大人聽了，怎能不氣呢？仗着膽

mounted police went out of the city after them. In the distance they could still see the robbers' torches, and after they had pursued them for about ten miles they saw torches again, and the robbers fired a few shots too. Naturally the Governor was angry, but he was very bold and he was lending some twenty or thirty mounted police all carrying foreign rifles, so they had no reason to be afraid. They went straight on, guided by flickering torches and occasional shots. By the time it was nearly daybreak they were not far behind them, and by then they had also reached the Yu Family Village. After they passed the village they found there were no more shots being fired nor torches flickering, so the Governor decided: "No need to go on. The robbers must be in the village."

"Then they turned their horses back, came to the village and dismounted at the War God's Temple on the main road. He ordered his mounted police to despatch eight men with two horses in each direction, not allowing anybody to leave the village, and summoned all the local headmen. The day was then already bright, and the Governor himself led his police on foot from the south end of the village to the north end, searching every family. After searching for a long time they could find no traces of robbers, so then they started again from east to west, and in Yu Chao-tung's house they discovered three localmade rifles, several swords and about a dozen sticks. The Governor was very angry and said "The robbers must be in this family" and he sent for the local headman and asked "What family is this?" The headman answered "The family name is Yu. The old man is called Yu Ch'ao-tung; he has two sons, the elder is called Yu Hsueh-shih and the younger Yu Hsueh-li.

子本來大，他手下又有二三十匹馬，都帶着洋槍，還怕甚麼呢？一直的追去，不是火光，便是槍聲。

『到了天快明時，眼看離追上不遠了，那時也到了這于家屯了。過了于家屯，再往前追，槍也沒有，火也沒有。玉大人心裏一想，說道：「不必往前追，這強盜一定在這村莊上了。」』

『當時勒回了馬頭，到了莊上。在大街當中有個關帝廟下了馬，吩咐手下的馬隊，派了八個人，東南西北一面兩匹馬把住，不許一個人出去。將地保鄉約等人叫起。這時天已大明了。這玉大人自己帶着馬隊上的人步行，從南頭到北頭，挨家去搜。搜了半天，一些形跡沒有。又從東望西搜去，剛剛搜到這于朝棟家，搜出三枝土槍，又有幾把刀。十幾根竿子。玉大人大怒，說：「強盜一定在他家了。」坐在廳上，叫地保來問：「這是甚麼人家？」地保回道：「這家姓于老頭子叫于朝棟。有兩個兒子，大兒子叫于學詩，二兒子叫于學禮；——都是捐的監生。」』

『玉大人立刻叫把這于家父子三個帶上來。你想一個鄉下人，見了府裏大人來了，又是盛怒之下，那有不怕的道理呢？上得廳房裏，父子三個跪下，已經

They are both college scholars."

"The Governor immediately called for the three men. You can imagine when a countryman sees the District Governor, and he in a towering rage, how can he fail to be afraid? When they came to the hall the three men knelt down, already trembling, and what could they say? The Governor said "How dare you? Where have you hidden the robbers?" The old man was too frightened to speak, but his younger son, who had studied for three years in the city and seen some society, was slightly bolder. He straightened himself and answered "My family are all honest people, and none has intercourse with robbers. How can we have hidden robbers?" The Governor said "If you are not in league with robbers, where did the weapons come from?" Yu Hsulh-li said "Because last year we were robbed and we often had robbers here in our village. we bought some long sticks and told our tenants and servants to come by turns to protect the family; and because the robbers all have foreign rifles, but we cannot get foreign rifles here in the country and did not dare to buy them, so we bought several local rifles from the hunters to fire a few shots at night to frighten away robbers." "Nonsense!" roared the Governor "Why should honest people keep weapons? You must all be robbers." Then he turned his head and said "Bailiffs" and his followers announced with one voice, like thunder "Here." The "Governor said" Guard the front and back doors and search them thoroughly."

"The mounted police then started searching the Yu family beginning from the inner rooms, and looked through all the cases and wardrobes, putting in their own pockets the lighter and more valuable trinkets. After they had

是擻擻的抖，那裏還能說話？玉大人說道：「你好大膽！你把強盜藏到那裏去了？」那老頭子早已嚇的說不出話來。還是他二兒子在府城裏讀過兩年書，見過點世面，胆子稍爲壯些，跪着伸直了腰，朝上回道：「監生家裏向來是良民，從沒有同強盜往來的，如何敢藏着強盜？」玉大人道：「既沒有勾通強盜，這軍器從那裏來的？」于學禮道：「因去年被盜之後，莊上不斷常有強盜來，所以買了幾根竿子，叫佃戶長工輪班來幾個保家。又因強盜都有洋槍，鄉下洋槍沒有買處，也不敢買；所以從他們打鳥兒的回了兩三枝土槍，夜裏放兩聲，驚嚇驚嚇強盜的意思。」玉大人喝道：「胡說！那有良民敢置軍火的道理！你家一定是強盜！」回頭叫了一聲來，那手下人便齊聲像打雷一樣答應了一聲。玉大人說：「你們把前後門都派人守了，替我切實的搜！」

「這些馬兵，忙到于家，從上房裏搜起，衣箱櫥櫃，全行抖擻一個盡；稍爲輕便值錢一點的首飾，就掖在腰裏去了。搜了半天倒也沒有搜出甚麼犯法的東西。那知搜到後來，在西北角上，有兩間堆破壞農器的一間屋子裏，搜出了一個包袱，裏頭有七八件衣裳，

searched for a long time they could not find anything illegal, but in the end, in two rooms in the north west corner where the broken farm tools were kept, they found a wrapper, in which were seven or eight pieces of clothing, three or four pieces of silk. The mounted police took them to the hall, and reported "We found this wrapper in a room dumped among other things. They do not look like their own clothes. Will your Honour please examine them carefully." The Governor looked at them and frowned, and when he had fixed his eyes on them for a while, he said "these clothes look as if they belonged to that family which was robbed the other day in the city. I will take them to my yamen and check them up on the list." Then he pointed out the clothes to the three men and said "Speak, where do these clothes come from?" The father and two sons looked at each other and could not answer, and Yu Hsuch-li said "We really do not know where they come from." The Governor then stood up and ordered twelve police to stay with the headman to take the three men to the city for the trial. After he had spoken he went out, and his followers led over the horses. He mounted and went back to the city first, with the rest of the police.

"The father and sons and the rest of the family clasped each other and wept bitterly; but the twelve police said "We have been riding all day and are famished. Quickly prepare some food for us and let us start immediately. For who does not know the Governor's temper? The later you are the worse it will be for you." The headman also hastily went home to tell his family and pack up his luggage. He ordered the Yu family to prepare several carriages, and they got into the carriages, and only reached the city when it was

有三四件還是舊紬子的。馬兵拏到廳上，回說：「在堆東西的裏房搜出這個包袱，不像是自己的衣服，請大人驗看。」

『那玉大人見了，眉毛一縐，眼睛一凝，說道：「這幾件衣服，我記得彷彿像是前天城裏失盜那一家子的。姑且帶回衙門去，照失單查對。」就指着衣服向于家父子道：「你說！這衣服那裏來的？」于家父子面面相窺，都回不出。還是于學禮說：「這衣服實在不曉得那裏來的。」玉大人就立起身來，吩咐留下十二個馬兵，同地保將于家父子帶回城去聽審。說着就出去。跟從的人，拉過馬來，騎上了馬，帶着餘下的人。先進城去。

『這裏于家父子，同他家裏人，抱頭痛哭。這十二個馬兵說：「我們跑了一夜，肚子裏很餓，你們趕緊給我們弄點喫的，趕緊走罷。大人的脾氣，誰不知道，越遲去越不得了。」地保也慌張的回去交代一聲，收拾行李，叫于家預備了幾輛車子，大家坐了進去。趕到二更多天，纔進了城。

『這裏于學禮的媳婦，是城裏吳舉人的姑娘。想着他丈夫同他公公大伯子都被捉去的，斷不能鬆散。

nearly midnight.

"Yu Hsueh-li's wife was the daughter of a Mr Wu in the city, who was an elected scholar, and she felt that since her husband and father-in-law and brother-in-law were all arrested, she should not stay behind; so she took counsel with her sister-in-law, saying" Now they have all been arrested, we must have somebody in the city to look after them. As for family affairs, I think you should look after them, while I go quickly to the city to look for my father to find some way out. What do you think?" Her sister-in-law said "Very good. I was just thinking somebody must go to the city to look after them. Those village people are all too countrified, and even if we sent several, when they reached the city they would behave like useless fools."

"After they had spoken she put together some things, chose a swift two-horse carriage and went to the city, and when she saw her father she wept aloud. It was then only about ten o'clock, and she was several miles ahead of the prisoners. Crying she told her father their great misfortune, and when her father heard it, he trembled in all his limbs and said" Now that you have come in the way of this Fury, it is very uncertain. I had better go there first to have a look." So he quickly put on his clothes and asked for an interview in the yamen, but the gateman went up and came back, saying" His Honour says this is a case of robbery, and he will see no one."

"Mr Wu was a friend of the secretary inside, so he hastily went in to see him, and explained the case. The secretary said "Under another Governor there would be no question about this case; but this master of ours never judges according to the law. If it comes to my department I

當時同他大嫂子商議，說：「他們爺兒三個，都被拘了去，城裏不能沒個人照料。我想家裏的事——大嫂子！你老照管着這裏。我也趕忙追進城去，找俺爸爸想法子去，你看好不好？」他大嫂子說：「很好很好。我正想着城裏不能沒人照應，這些管莊子的，都是鄉下老兒，就差幾個去，到得城裏，也同傻子一樣，沒有用處的。」

『說着，吳氏就收拾收拾，選了一掛雙套飛車，趕進城去。到了他父親面前，號咷大哭。這時候不過一更多天，比他們父子三個，還早十幾里路呢。吳氏一頭哭着，一頭把飛災大禍告訴了他父親。他父親——吳舉人——一聽，渾身發抖，抖着說道：「犯着這位喪門星，事情可就大大的不妥了，我先去走一趟看罷。」連忙穿了衣服，到府衙門求見，號房上去回過，說：「大人說的：現在要辦盜案，無論甚麼人，一應不見。」

『吳舉人同裏頭刑名師爺素來相好，連忙進去見了師爺，把這種種冤枉說了一遍。師爺說：「這案在別人手裏，斷然無事。但這位東家，向來不照律例辦事的；如能交到兄弟書房裏來，包你無事，恐怕不交下

guarantee you their safety; but I am afraid it may not come to my department, and in that case I can do nothing." Mr Wu bowed to him several times, and entrusted the matter to him. Then he went quickly to the East Gate to wait for them to arrive. After about the time for one cup of tea the mounted police came up with the carriage. Mr Wu went forward and saw them looking ghastly pale, and when Yu Ch'ao-tung saw him, all he said was "Save me" while his tears flowed down like a flood. Mr Wu was just going to speak when the mounted police at the side shouted "His Honour is waiting at the court, and has already sent several riders to look for us. Better go quickly." Then the carriage did not stop. Mr Wu followed the carriage and said "Take comfort. It doesn't matter what trouble you are in, I will do all I can."

"As he was speaking they had already reached the yamen, and several bailiffs came out to hurry them, saying" "Bring them immediately to the court." Then some bailiffs came and put the three men in chains and took them up. They had no sooner knelt down than the Governor threw down the list of lost property and asked "Have you anything to say?" "We are innocent" was all the three men said. The Governor banged the table with the clapper and shouted aloud "Confronted with the booty, you still say you are innocent? Put them in the pillory." Then the bailiffs by the side dragged them away by force." If you want to know what happened afterwards, you must read the next chapter.

來，那就沒法了。」吳舉人接連作了幾個揖。重託了出來。趕到東門口，等他親家女婿進來。

『不過一杯茶的時候，那馬兵押着車子已到，吳舉人搶到面前，見他三人面無人色。于朝棟看了看，只說了一句「親家救我，」那眼淚就同潮水一樣的，直流下來。吳舉人方要開口，旁邊的馬兵嚷道：「大人久已坐在堂上等着呢，已經四五撥子馬來催過了，趕快走罷！」車子也並不敢停留，吳舉人便跟着車子走着，說道：「親家寬心！湯裏，火裏，我但有法子，必去就是了。」

『說着，已到衙門口，只見衙裏許多公人出來催道：「趕緊帶上堂去罷！」當時來了幾個差人，用鐵鍊子將于家父子鎖好，帶上去，方跪下，玉大人掣了失單交下來說：「你門還有得說的嗎？」于家父子方說得一聲「冤枉！」只聽堂上驚堂一拍，大嚷道：「人贓現獲，還喊冤枉，把他上了站籠站起來！」左右差人，連拖帶拽，拉下去了。」欲知後事如何，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER V.

It is said that Old Tung went on with his story saying, "When Mr. Wu went to the district office to ask for an interview, his daughter, the wife of Yu Hsueh-li, went with him to the yamen entrance, and sat down in the Long Life Medicine Shop to await news. She heard that the Governor would not see her father and that he had gone in to plead with the secretary, and she knew that this boded no good, so she immediately called the head-bailiff, Ch'en Jen-mei, a well known and able officer in Tsaochow. She asked him to come and told him of the injustice, begging him to do something.

"When Ch'en Jen-mei heard it he shook his head and said, "This was a trick played by the robbers to revenge themselves. You have night-watchmen and guards in your family; how could you let the robbers plant the booty in your rooms without your knowledge? You really have been foolish." Then she took off a pair of gold bracelets from her arm and gave them to Mr. Ch'en, saying "Anyway you must help us. If you can save their lives we don't mind how much money we spend, not caring even if we have to sell all our land and property and go away begging." Mr. Ch'en said "I will go and look for some way out. You needn't be pleased if I succeed; but don't complain if I fail. I will do all in my power, but I can't do more than that. By this time they must have arrived. The Governor is already sitting in the court. I will go quickly and see what

第五 章

話說老董接續說道：『當那吳舉人到府衙門請見的時候，他女兒——于學禮的媳婦——也跟到衙門口借了延生堂的藥鋪裏坐下，打聽消息。聽說府裏大人不見，他父親已到衙門裏頭求師爺去了，吳氏便知事體不好，立刻叫人把三班頭兒請來。那頭兒姓陳，名仁美，是曹州府著名的能吏。吳氏將他請來，把被屈的情形告訴了一遍，央他從中設法。

『陳仁美聽了，把頭連搖幾搖，說：「這是強盜報仇，做的圈套。你們家又有上夜的，又有保家的，怎麼就讓強盜把賊物送到家中屋子裏，還不知道？也算得個特等糊塗了。」吳氏就從手上抹下一付金鐲子，遞給陳頭，說：「無論怎樣，總要頭兒費心。但能救得三人性命，無論花多少錢都願意的，——就是將田地房產賣盡，咱一家子討飯去，都使得。」陳頭兒道：「我去替少奶奶設法，做得成也別歡喜，做不成也別埋怨；俺有多少力量，用多少力量就是了。這早晚，他爺兒三個恐怕要到了，大人已是坐在堂上等着呢，我趕快替少奶奶打點去。」說罷告辭。

I can do for you." Then he went away.

"When the head bailiff went back to the bailiff's office he put the bracelets on the table in the middle of the hall, and said" Gentlemen, this Yu family case is certainly unjust. Let us all put our heads together to see if we have any way to help them; for if we can save their lives, in the first place it will be a good deed, and in the second place we shall all profit to the tune of several taels of silver. Whoever can think of a good plan can have this pair of bracelets." The bailiffs all answered "There is no sure method. We shall have to act as the opportunity arises, and do what we can." When they had spoken their first act was to tell the other bailiffs standing by the court to look for an opportunity.

"By this time the three men had already entered the court, and when the Governor ordered them to be pilloried some bailiffs came and dragged them away by force. Then the head bailiff, who was on duty that day, went up to the Governor's table, knelt on one knee and said" Your Honour, I beg to report that there are no spare pillories today." When the Governor heard it he was angry and said "Nonsense. I don't remember putting anybody in the pillory these last two days. How could there be no room?" The bailiff said "There are only twelve pillories, and they have all been filled during the last three days. Will Your Honour please look up the record?" The Governor turned up the record using his fingers to count on the book, and said "One, two, three; yesterday there were three. One, two, three, four, five; the day before yesterday there were five. One, two, three, four; the day before that there were four. There are no spare ones; you are quite right." The bailiff

「陳碩兒回到班房，把金鑊子望堂中桌上一擱，開口道：「諸位兄弟叔伯們！今兒子家這案，明是冤枉的。諸位有甚麼法子，大家幫湊想想；如能救得他們三人性命，一則是件好事，二則大家也可沾潤幾兩銀子。誰能想出妙計，這付鑊就是誰的。」大家答道：「那有一準的法子呢？只好相機行事，做到那裏說那裏話罷。」說過，各人先去通知已站在堂上的夥計們，留神方便。

「這時于家父子三個，已到堂上，玉大人叫把他們站起來，就有幾個差人橫拖倒拽將他三人拉下堂來。這邊值日頭兒，就走到公案面前，跪了一條腿回道：「稟大人的話，今日站籠沒有空子，請大人示下。」那玉大人一聽，怒道：「胡說！我這兩天記得沒有站甚麼人，怎會沒有空子呢？」值日差回道：「只有十二架站籠，三天已滿，請大人查簿子看。」大人一查簿子，用手在簿子上點着說：「一，二，三，昨兒是三個；一，二，三，四，五，前兒是五個；一，二，三，四，大前兒是四個；沒有空，倒也不錯的。」差人又回道：「今兒可否將他們先行收監？明天定有幾個死的。等站籠出了缺，將他們補上好不好？請大人示下。」玉大

then said "Could we put them in tã oprison first, today? There are bound to be a few men dead tomorrow, and when there are vacant pillories we can put them in, Your Honour." The Governor thought for a while, and said, "I hate these people. If you put them in prison they will live one day more. That would never do. Go and take down those four who were pilloried three days ago, and bring them here for my inspection." So the bailiffs went and took down the four men, and dragged them to the court. The Governor himself came down from his platform, put his finger before their nostrils and said "They have still a little breath." Then he returned to his seat, and ordered: "Give them two thousand strokes each. See if they die or not." However, after less than a few dozen strokes the four men all died. Then they had no choice but to put the three men in the pillories; however, they placed three blocks of brick under their feet, so that they could live for three or four days, while they hastily looked for other ways. But although they wracked their brains to think of a solution, none would answer.

"Yu Hsueh-li's wife was indeed most devoted, and every day she came to the pillories to give them some soup to drink. After feeding them she went home and cried, and after crying she went to plead with other people again, knocking her head on the ground many thousands of times; but none could prevail upon the bull-like temper of the Governor. Yu Ch'ao-tung was advanced in years and he died on the third day, while by the fourth day Yu Hsueh-shih was nearly dying. The wife took back the old man's corpse and supervised the funeral preparations, changing into mourning dress and entrusting the funeral of her husband and brother-in-law

人疑了一凝神，說道：「我最恨這些東西，若要將他們收監，豈不是又被他多活了一天去了嗎？斷乎不行！你們去把大前天站的四個放下，拉來我看。」差人去將那四人放下，拉上堂去。大人親自下案，用手摸着四人鼻子，說道：「是還有點游氣。」復行坐上堂去，說：「每人打二千板子，看他死不死。」那知每人不消得幾十板子，那四個人就都死了。衆人沒法，只好將于家父子站起，却在脚下選了三塊厚氈，讓他可以三四天不死，趕忙想法。誰知什麼法子都想到，仍是不濟。

『這吳氏真是好個賢惠婦人，他天天到站籠前來灌點參湯，灌了回去就哭，哭了就去求人，響頭不知磕了幾千，總沒有人挽回得動這玉大人的牛性。于朝棟究竟上了幾歲年紀，第三天就死了。于學詩到第四天也就差不多了。吳氏將于朝棟屍首領回，親視含殮，換了孝服，將他大伯丈夫後事囑託了他父親，自己跪到府衙門口，對着于學禮哭了個死去活來。末後向他丈夫說道：「你慢慢的走，我替你先到地下收拾房子去。」說罷，袖中掏出一把飛利的小刀，向脖子上只一抹，就沒有了氣了。

to her father. Then she went and knelt down before the yamen, weeping bitterly before her husband, and finally she said to him "You depart slowly. I will descend first under the earth to prepare your chambers." So saying she took out a keen dagger from her sleeve, slashed her throat and died.

When the head bailiff Chen Jen-Mei saw it, he said "Gentlemen, the devotion of this lady is good enough to be publicly praised. I think if Yu Hsueh-li were taken down now, he might still live; therefore let us use this opportunity to go up and plead for him." They all said "Good." The head bailiff then went immediately to look for the Archivist and told him of the lady's devotion, saying "The people think this devoted wife has sacrificed herself for her husband, and are deeply touched. Could we ask the Governor to release her husband in order to comfort the spirit of the lady?" The Archivist said "Quite right. I will go and see about it for you." Then he snatched up his tall hat, put it on and went to the office, where he explained to the Governor how devoted and heroic the woman was, and how all the people begged for a pardon.

The Governor laughed and said "Good. You have all suddenly become kind-hearted. You know how to be kind-hearted to Yu Hsueh-li but will not be kind-hearted to your master; for whether he is guilty or not, if we release him he will not rest content, and I shall not be able to keep my post in future. The proverb says 'When you cut grass, you must pull out the roots, and so it is here. This woman was even more odious, for she was obsessed with the idea that I had dealt unjustly with her family. If she were not a woman, even though she is dead, I would give her another two thousand strokes to vent my anger. You tell them outside

「這裏三班頭子陳仁美看見，說：「諸位！這吳少奶奶的節烈，可以得請旌表的。我看倘若這時把于學詩放下來，還可以活，我們不如借這個題目，上去替他求一求罷。」衆人都說：「有理。」陳頭立刻進去，找了稿案門上，把那吳氏怎樣節烈說了一遍。又說：「民間的意思，說這節婦爲夫自盡，情實可憫，可否求大人將他丈夫放下，以慰烈婦幽魂？」稿案說：「這話很有理。我就替你回去。」抓了一頂大帽子戴上，走到簽押房，見了大人，把吳氏怎樣節烈；衆人怎樣乞恩，說了一遍。

『玉大人笑道：「你們倒好，忽然的慈悲起來了。你會慈悲于學詩，你就不會慈悲你主人嗎？這人無論冤枉不冤枉，若放下他，一定不能甘心，將來連我前程都保不住。俗語說的好：『斬草要除根，』就是這個道理。況這吳氏，尤其可恨。他一肚子覺得我冤枉了他一家子，若不是個女人，他雖死了，我還要打他二千板子，出出氣呢！你傳話出去，誰要再來替于家求情，就是得賄的憑據，不用上來回，就把這求情的人，也用站籠站起來就完了。」稿案下來，一五一十將話告知了陳仁美，大家嘆口氣，就散了。

that if anybody else comes to plead for the Yu family we shall not need further proof of their being bribed, then you need not even report to me, but can put the man in the pillories also. That is all." The Archivist then came out and related this in detail to Ch'en Jen-mei. They both sighed and departed.

"In the Wu family they had already prepared the coffins for the funeral, and by the evening Both Yu Hsueh-shih and Yu Hsueh-li were dead. The four coffins of the family were all placed in the Buddhisattva temple outside the West Gate, and when I went to town in spring I saw them too."

Mr. Decadent asked "What happened to the Yu family afterwards? Didn't they want to take revenge?" Old Tung said "What could they do? When people are unjustly treated by the authorities, what can they do but endure it? If you report to a superior officer, according to law he will send the case back to the District Governor, and once it comes into his hands, there will be another man condemned. Yu Ch'ao-tung's son-in-law was a district scholar, and after the other four had lost their lives Yu Hsueh-shih's wife also went to town and thought of reporting to the superior; but older and more experienced people said "It is not safe; for who would go? If an outsider goes, since he is not connected with the case he will first be accused of meddling with other people's business; whereas if the mistress goes, what will happen to the two young grandchildren and all the other household affairs to which she has to attend at home? If something should happen to her, the property will be divided by all the relatives, and then who will look after the two children? In that case the Yu family will come to an end." Somebody said "The mistress certainly can't go, but

「那裏吳家業已備了棺木前來收殮，到晚，于學詩于學禮先後死了。一家四口棺木，都停在西門外觀音寺裏。我春間進城，還去看了看呢。」

老殘道：「于家後來怎麼來呢？就不想報仇嗎？」

老董說道：「那有甚麼法子呢？民家被官家害了，除却忍受，更有什麼法子？倘若是上控，照例仍舊發回來審問，再落在他手裏，還不是又饒上一個嗎？那于朝棟的女婿，倒是一個秀才，四個人死後，于學詩的媳婦，也到城裏去了一趟，商議着要上控。就有那老年見過世面的人說，不妥不妥。你想叫誰去呢？叫外人去，做事不干己，先有個多事的罪名。若說叫于大奶奶去罷，兩個孫子還小，家裏偌大的事業，全靠他一人支撐呢。他再有個長短，這家業怕不是衆親族一分？這兩個小孫子誰來撫養？反把于家香煙絕了。」

「又有人說：「大奶奶是去不得的，倘若是姑老爺去走一趟，倒沒有什麼不可。」他姑老爺說：「我去是很可以去，只是與正事無濟，反叫站籠裏多添個屈死鬼。你想撫臺一定發回原官審問，縱然派個委員前來會審，官官相護。他又擎着人家失單衣服來頂我們，我們不過說那是強盜的移贓，他們問你瞧見強盜

if her son-in-law goes, that will be all right." The son-in-law said "Of course I am willing to go, but it won't help the situation; it will just mean another man dying in the pillory. For the Provincial Governor will certainly send the case back to the original District Governor, and even if he sends a commissioner to help to preside over the court, officials will always help each other. Besides he has got the clothes and the lost property list as evidence against us. All we can say is that the robbers planted their booty there; but if they ask "Did you see the robbers put it there? What evidence have you?" we shall have nothing to say. He is an official and we are common people, he has the lost property list as evidence and we have no evidence at all. Think for yourselves: how could we win the case?" Then they thought and agreed that really nothing could be done, so there the matter rested.

"Later I heard them say that when the robbers who planted the booty knew of it, they all regretted it very much, and said "We formerly hated them for reporting us and having two of our comrades killed; so we used the method of 'hoist with his own petard,' wanting to give them a few months trouble when they would certainly have to spend one or two thousand strings of coins. But who could tell it would come to such a pass that four of them would lose their lives? Actually we were not such bitter enemies."

When Old Tung had finished his story, he asked again "Now don't you think he was supplying the robbers with a weapon?" Mr. Decadent said "Who heard what the robbers said?" "It was Ch'en Jen-mei" said Old Tung. "Since the plea was rejected and the people died so pitifully, and they had received a pair of golden bracelets without doing

移的嗎？你有什麼證據？那時自然說不出來。他是官，我們是民；他是有失單爲憑的，我們是憑空裏沒有證據的；你說這官事打得贏打不贏呢？」衆人想想也是真沒有法子，只好罷了。

『後來聽見他們說，那移賊的強盜，聽見這樣，都後悔的了不得。說：「我當初恨他報案，毀了我兩個弟兄，所以用個借刀殺人的法子，讓他家喫幾個月官事，不怕不毀他一兩千吊錢。誰知道就鬧的這們利害。連傷了他四條人命。委實我同他家也沒有這大的仇隙。」』

老董說罷，復道：『你老想想，這不是給強盜做兵器嗎？』老殘道：『這強盜所說的話，又是誰聽見的呢？』老董道：『那是陳仁美他們碰了釘子下來，看這于家死的實在可慘，又平白的受了人家一付金鑊子，心裏也有點過不去，所以大家動了公憤，齊心齊意要破這一案。又加着那鄰近地方，有些江湖上的英雄，也恨這夥強盜做的太毒；所以不到一個月，就捉住了五六個人。有三四個牽連着別的案情的，都站死了。有兩三個專只犯于家移賊這一案的，被玉大人都放了。』老殘說：『玉賢這個酷吏，實在令人可恨！』

anything, they felt rather bad; so they became more indignant and all determined to find the robbers. There were also some local champions in the neighbouring districts who felt that the robbers had gone too far, so in less than a month they caught five or six robbers, among whom were three connected with other cases, who were all pilloried and died; and two or three of them were only involved in this case, and they were released by the Governor." "This cruel official is indeed abominable" exclaimed Mr Decadent. "Apart from this case, what other deeds of injustice has he perpetrated?" "Countless others" replied Old Tung. "Let me tell you of a case in this district which was also unjust; but since only one man died, it did not seem so flagrant. I will tell you."

Just as Old Tung was going to speak, his assistant Wang called out "Manager, what are you doing? We are all waiting for you to fetch the flour for dinner. Once you start talking you never stop." When Old Tung heard it, he stood up, went to the back, got the flour and prepared the dinner; then several small carts arrived in succession, and gradually travellers came to the inn, and while Old Tung looked after them all he had no time to talk. After a short time they had dinner, after which Old Tung was very busy working out the various accounts and attending to the business.

Mr. Decadent was left with nothing to do, so he strolled down the street, and after he had walked twenty or thirty yards eastwards he came to a small shop selling oil, salt and groceries. He went in and bought three packets of tobacco, then sat down and looked at the man behind the counter, a man of over fifty, and said to him "May I ask your name?"

他除了這一案不算，別的案子辦得怎麼樣呢？」老董說：「多着呢。等我慢慢的說給你聽。就咱這個本莊，就有一案，也是冤枉；不過條把人命，就不算事了。我說給你老聽。」

老董正要往下說時，只聽他夥計王三喊道：「掌櫃的你怎麼着了？大家等你挖麵做飯喫呢！你老的話布口袋破了口兒，說不完了。」老董聽着，就站起，走往後邊挖麵做飯。接連又來了幾輛小車，漸漸的打尖的客陸續都到店裏，老董前後招呼，不暇來說閒話。過了一刻，喫過了飯，老董在各處算飯錢，招呼生意，正忙得有勁。

老殘無事，便向街頭閒逛，出門望東走了二三十步，有家小店，賣油鹽雜貨。老殘進去，買了兩包蘭花潮煙，順便坐下。看櫃臺裏邊的人，約有五十多歲光景，就問他：「貴姓？」那人道：「姓王就是本地人氏，你老貴姓！」老殘道：「姓鐵江南人氏。」那人道：「江南真好地方，上有天堂，下有蘇杭，不像我們這地獄世界！」老殘道：「此地有山有水；也種稻，也種麥，與江南何異？」那人嘆口氣道：「一言難盡！」就不往下說了。

He answered "Wang, of this district What is your name, sir?" Mr Decadent said "T'ieh, from south of the Yangtze River." The other said "That is a good district. As the proverb says 'There is Paradise above and Suchow below'. It, isn't like our hell on earth." Mr Decadent said "You have mountains and rivers, and grow wheat and rice. What difference is there?" That man sighed and said "It is difficult to say" and then he was silent. Mr Decadent asked "Is your Governor good?" and he said "He is an honest official and a good official. Outside his yamen there are twelve pillories, and not one is unused any day. It would be rare to find one or two empty." As he was speaking a middle-aged woman came in from the back to fetch something, carrying in her hand a small bowl. When she saw somebody in the shop, she cast him a glance, then went on with her search.

Mr. Decadent asked "How could there be so many robbers?" and Mr Wang said "Who knows?" "I suppose many cases are unjust?" asked Mr. Decadent. "Quite just, quite just" said the other." Mr. Decadent said "I hear that whenever he sees anybody, if he doesn't like his looks he will put him in the pillory, and if a man speaks wrongly, then when he falls into his hands he will also be killed. Is it true?" That man said "No, no." During this conversation he noticed that that man had lost colour and his eyes become red, while when he said "When a man speaks wrongly" the other's eyes were filled with tears, only they did not fall. But the woman who was searching for things looked away and could not help letting her tears fall, and, abandoning her search, holding a bowl in one hand and shading her eyes with her other sleeve, she ran to the back,

老殘道：「你們這玉大人好嗎？」那人道：「是個清官，是個好官。——衙門口有十二架站籠，天天不得空；難得有天把空得一個兩個的。」說話的時候，後面走出一個中年婦人，在山架上檢尋物件，手裏拿着一個粗盃，看櫃臺外邊有人，他看了一眼仍找物件。

老殘道：「那有這們麼多盜呢？」那人道：「誰知道呢？」老殘道：「恐怕總是冤枉得多罷？」那人道：「不冤枉，不冤枉。」老殘道：「聽說他隨便見着甚麼人，只要不順他的眼，他就把他用站籠站死；或者說話說的不得法，犯到他手裏，也是一個死。有這話嗎？」那人說：「沒有沒有。」

說話的時候，只見那人一面答話，那臉就漸漸發青，眼眶子就漸漸發紅；聽到或者說話說的不得法這兩句的時候，那人眼裏已經攔了許多淚，不過未曾墜下。那找尋物件的婦人，朝外一看，却止不住淚珠直滾下來；也不找尋物件，一手拿着盃，一手用袖子掩了眼睛，跑往後面去；纔走到院子裏，就醜醜的哭起來了。老殘頗想再往下問，因那人顏色過於悽慘，知道必有一番負屈含冤的苦，不敢說出來的光景，也只

and when she reached the courtyard she started crying. Mr Decadent wanted to question him further, but since he looked so sad he knew there was something amiss, and dared say no more; so he spoke of something else and left.

When Mr. Decadent returned to the inn he sat for a while in his room, read a few pages and meditated for a time. Then he noticed Old Tung was no longer busy, so he walked out slowly to chat with him, told him what he had seen in the small grocery shop, and asked him the reason, "That fellow is named Wang" said Old Tung "and his family only consists of his wife and himself. He married when he was about thirty and his wife was some ten years younger. After marriage they only had one son who would be twenty one this year. The coarse goods in their shop they used to sell in the village, and when there was a fair they would buy something more delicate for their son to take to the city to sell. This spring when the lad was in the city it happened that he had too much to drink, and talked carelessly outside some shop, saying how foolish the Governor was and how he wronged people. He was overheard by some of the Governor's spies, and they took him to the yamen. When the Governor ascended the court he simply cursed him, saying "How dare you spread rumours to deceive the people?" Then he was put in the pillory and he died in less than two days. That middle-aged woman you just saw was Mr Wang's wife. She is over fifty now and only had this son without any other child, so naturally she felt sad when you mentioned the Governor."

"This Governor certainly deserves more than death" said Mr. Decadent. "How could he have such a good reputation in the provincial capital? If I had power he

好搭訕着去了。

老殘走回店去，就到本房坐了一刻，看了兩頁書，想了一回事。見老董事也忙完，就緩緩的走出，找着老董閒話。便將剛纔小雜貨店裏所見光景，告訴老董問他是甚麼緣故。

老董說：『這人姓王，只有夫妻兩個，三十歲上成家；他女人小他頭十歲呢。成家後，只生了一個兒子，今年已經二十一歲了。這家店裏的貨，粗笨的本莊，有集的時候，買進那細巧一點子的，都是他這兒子到府城裏去販買。春間，他兒子在府城裏，不知怎樣，多喫了兩杯酒，在人家店門口，就把這玉大人怎樣糊塗，怎樣好冤枉人，隨口瞎說。被玉大人心腹私訪的人聽見，就把他抓進衙門。大人坐堂，只罵了一句說：「你這東西謠言惑衆，還了得嗎！」站起站籠，不到兩天，就站死了。你老纔見的那中年婦人，就是這王姓的妻子，他也四十歲外了，夫妻兩個只有此子，另外更無別人，你提起玉大人，叫他怎樣不傷心呢？』

老殘說：『這個玉賢，真正死有餘辜的人！怎樣省城官聲，好到那步田地？煞是怪事！我若有權，此人在必殺之例。』老董說：『你老小點嗓子。你老在此

would certainly be among those I would kill." Old Tung said "Don't speak so loudly, sir. You can say anything you like here, but if you talk that in the city it may cost you your life." Mr. Decadent said "Thanks for the warning I will be careful." Then they had supper and slept.

The next day Mr. Decadent said goodbye to Old Tung, went to his cart and the same evening reached Horse Fair. This fair was a smaller village than the last, less than twenty miles from Tsaochow, and when Mr. Decadent looked on the street there were only three inns, two of which were already full, while the doors of the other were closed. Mr. Decadent pushed open the door and went in, but could not find anybody; however after a long time a man came out and said "We are not taking guests these days" and when he asked him why he would not explain. He wanted to go elsewhere but the other inns were full, so he had to plead with him, and finally that man very grudgingly opened the door of one room, saying at the same time "We have no hot water nor food. Since you have no place to stay, you can put up here; but our manager has gone to the city to fetch a corpse, and there is nobody else in the shop. If you want to have a meal or drink tea, there is a restaurant on the south side which is also a teashop, where you can go." Mr. Decadent quickly said "Thank you, thank you. A traveller, you know, has to put up with anything." That man said "I am staying in the room on the south, by the door. If you want anything, sir, come and call me."

When Mr. Decadent heard the words 'fetching a corpse', it set him thinking. After he had finished his supper that evening he went back to the inn, having bought some dry bean curd preserved in tea, four or five packets of peanuts

地，隨便說說，還不要緊；若到城裏，可別這們說了，要送性命的呢！」老殘道：「承關照，我留心就是了。」當日喫過晚飯，安歇。

第二天，老殘辭了老董上車動身。當晚，到了馬村集。這集比董家口略小些，離曹州府城只有四十五里遠近。老殘在街上看了看，只有三家車店，兩家已經住滿，只有一家未有人住，大門却是掩着，老殘推門進去，找不着人。半天，纔有一個人出來說：「我家這兩天不住客人。」問他甚麼緣故，却也不說。欲往別家，已無隙地。不得已，同他再三商議，那人纔沒精打采的開了一間房子。嘴裏還說：「茶水飯食都沒有的。客人沒地方睡，在這裏將就點罷。我們掌櫃的進城收屍去了，店裏沒人，你老喫飯喝茶，門口南邊有個飯店帶茶館，可以去的。」老殘連聲說：「承教，承教。行路的人，怎樣將就都行得的。」那人說：「我困在大門旁邊南屋裏，你老有事，來招呼我罷。」

老殘聽了「收屍」二字，心裏着實放心不下，晚間喫完了飯，回轉店裏，買了幾塊茶乾四五包長生果，又沽了兩瓶酒，連那沙瓶攜了回來，那個店夥，早已把燈掌上。老殘對店夥道：「此地有酒，你鬥了大

and two bottles of wine, which he took back. The assistant had already lit the lamp and Mr Decadent said to him "I have wine for you. After you have barred the door come and have a cup." The other consented very readily ran at once to bar the door and came straight in and stood there, saying "Help yourself, sir, I won't take any." Mr Decadent made him sit down and poured out a cup of wine for him, and he was so pleased that he showed his teeth in a smile as he repeated several times "Oh no, oh no" although actually the cup had already reached his lips.

In the beginning they spoke of things in general, but after a few cups Mr. Decadent asked "Just now you said the manager had gone to the city to fetch a corpse. What did you mean by that? Was it somebody killed by the Governor?" The assistant said "Since there is nobody here, I can speak freely. Our Governor is really a terror, a real devil, to meet him means death. It is his borther-in-law our manager has gone into the city to fetch." His brother-in-law was a very harmless person and because the manager was so fond of his sister they all stayed in the back of this shop. His brother-in-law often bought several rolls of cloth from the country looms to sell in the city at a profit to meet daily expenditure, and one day he went to the city carrying four rolls of white cloth which he put on the ground outside the temple. He sold two rolls in the morning, then he sold another five feet, and finally there came a man who wanted to have eight feet five, but insisted on having it from the other whole roll, saying "I will pay two cents more for each foot rather than have that roll which has been started." When the countryman saw that he could sell his cloth at a greater profit, naturally he had no objection, so he cut it off for him.

門，可以來喝一杯罷。」店夥欣然應諾。跑去把大門上了大門，一直進來，立着說：「你老請用罷，俺是不敢當的。」老殘拉他坐下，倒了一杯酒給他。他歡喜的支着牙，連道：「不敢，不敢。」其實酒杯子早已送到嘴邊去了。

初起說些閒話，幾杯之後，老殘便問：「你方纔說掌櫃的進城收屍去了，這話怎講？難道又是甚人害在玉大人手裏了嗎？」那店夥說道：「仗着此地一個人也沒有，我可以放肆說兩句：俺們這個玉大人，真是了不得，賽過活閻王，碰着了，就是個死！」

「俺掌櫃的進城，爲的是他妹夫。他這妹夫，也是個極老實的人。因爲掌櫃的哥妹兩個極好，所以都住在這店裏後面。他妹夫常常在鄉下攤上買幾匹布，到城裏去賣；賺幾個錢，貼補着零用。那天背着四匹白布進城，在廟門口擺在地下賣。早晨賣去兩匹，後來又賣去了五尺；末後又來一個人，撕八尺五寸布，一定要在那整匹上撕，說：「情願每尺多給兩個大錢，只是不要撕過那匹上的布。」鄉下人見多賣十幾個錢，有個不願意的嗎？自然就給他撕了。」

「誰知沒有兩頓飯工夫，玉大人騎着馬，走廟門口過，旁邊有個人上去，不知道了兩句甚麼話，只見

However, during the time of less than two meals the Governor, riding his horse, passed the temple and somebody went up from the roadside and said something to him. The Governor then looked at him, and said "Take this man and his cloth to the yamen." When he reached the yamen the Governor ascended the court and ordered them to bring up the cloth, examined it and beat on the table, asking "Where did you get this cloth?" He said "I brought it from the country." The Governor asked "How many feet are there in each length?" He said "From one of them I sold five feet and from the other eight feet five." The Governor said "Since you are a retailer and the two reams of cloth are identical, why should some be sold here and some there? How is it you couldn't say how much there was left?" Then he ordered the bailiff: "Measure that cloth for me." When the cloth was measured he reported that one piece was twenty-five feet long and one twenty feet six inches.

"When the Governor heard it he was very angry and threw down a paper, saying "Can you read?" He answered "No." The Governor said "Read it to him." A clerk at the side took the paper and read" On the morning of the seventeenth Mr. Chin reported 'Yesterday at sunset I was robbed five miles outside the West Gate. A man came out from the woods and attacked me with a sword, striking at my shoulder. He stole a string of four hundred coins and two rolls of white cloth, one twenty-five feet long and one twenty feet and a half.' When this had been read the Governor said "Both the measurements and the colour of the cloth coincide with those of the report. You must be the robber; and do you still want to argue? Drag him down and put him in the pillory. Then return the cloth to the original owner and let him consider the case closed." If you want to know what happened afterwards you must read the next chapter

玉大人朝他望了望，就說：「把這個人連布帶到衙門裏去！」

「到了衙門，大人就坐堂，叫把布呈上去，看了一眼，就拍着驚堂問道：「你這布那裏來的？」他說：「我鄉下買來的。」又問：「每個有多少尺寸？」他說：「一個賣過五尺。一個賣過八尺五寸。」大人說：「你既是零賣，兩個是一樣的布，爲甚麼這個上撕撕，那個上扯扯呢？還剩多少尺寸，怎麼說不出來呢？」——叫差人——「替我把這布量一量！」當時量過，報上去說：「一個是二丈五尺；一個是二丈一尺五寸。」

「大人聽了，當時大怒，發下一個單子來說：「你認得字嗎？」他說：「不認識。」大人說：「念給他聽！」旁邊一個書辦先生，拿過單子念道：「十七日早，金四報：昨日太陽落山時候，在西門外十五里地方被劫，是一個人從樹林子裏出來，用大刀在我肩膀上砍了一刀，搶去大錢一吊四百，白布兩個：一個長兩丈五尺，一個長二丈一尺五寸，」念到此，玉大人說：「布匹尺寸顏色，都與失單相符，這案不是你搶的嗎？你還想狡強嗎？拉下去站起來！把布匹交還金四完案。」」欲知後事如何，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER VI.

IT is said that the assistant was telling how, when the innkeeper's brother-in-law was carried off and put in the pillory, his cloth was given to that Mr Chin and the matter was closed. Mr. Decadent then said "It is clear to me that this must have been engineered by the bailiffs, and so of course your master has to go to bring back the corpse. But since he was innocent, why should people injure him? Hasn't your master found out the reason?" The assistant said "Regarding that, as soon as he was caught we knew what it was. All the trouble came about because he was fond of talking. This is what I heard from other people: in a small alley in the city, on the west end of the main street by the South Gate, there was a family consisting of only the father and daughter. The father was some forty years old, and the daughter about seventeen. She was very charming and unmarried. The father used to have a small business, and they lived in three thatched rooms inside a mud-walled court. One day the daughter was standing by the door when she was seen by Two-armed Wang, the chief of the mounted police, and he was so taken with her beauty that somehow he contrived to possess her. After some time, unfortunately, the father came home and discovered him, and he was so angry that he beat his daughter very severely and locked up the main door, not allowing her to go out. But in less than a fortnight Two-armed Wang brought some accusation to make the father out to be a robber, so

第 六 章

話說店夥說到將他妹夫扯去站了站籠，布匹交金四完案，老殘便道：『這事我已明白，自然是捕快做的圈套，你們掌櫃的自然應該替他收屍去的。但是他一個老實人；爲什麼人要這們害他呢？你掌櫃的就沒有打聽打聽嗎？』

店夥道：『這事，一被拿，我們就知道了，都是爲他嘴快，惹下去的亂子。我也是聽人家說的：府裏南門大街西邊小衚衕裏，有一家子，只有父女兩個。他爸爸四十來歲，他女兒十七八歲，長的有十分人材，還沒有婆家；他爸爸做些小生意，住了三間草房，一個土牆院子。這閨女有一天在門口站着，碰見了府裏馬隊上什長花肱膊王三因此王三看他長的體面，不知怎麼，胡二巴越的就把他弄上手了。過了些時，活該有事，被他爸爸回來，一頭撞見，氣了個半死，把他閨女着實打了一頓，就把大門鎖上，不許女兒出去。不

that he was put in the pillory and killed. Thus, later not only did the daughter become his wife, but that small house also went to him.

"Our master's brother-in-law used to sell cloth to that family and knew them, so he had heard of this. One day he drank a cup too much in the restaurant, and talked foolishly while he was drinking with Baldhead Chang in North Street, saying "Why is it that these people have no conscience?" That man Chang was also a foolish fellow and he was interested in the story and took it up, saying "He is one of those Boxers and many deities take possession of him, so why didn't some of those spirits restrain him?" "Just what I was thinking" said the brother-in-law, "I heard that some time ago he called for the Monkey God, but the Monkey God did not come and the Pig God came instead. If he were not acting against his conscience why shouldn't the Monkey God come, but send the Pig God instead? Since he is so unprincipled I fear one day the Monkey God may be angry; then he will raise his gold-plated club and strike him. That would be too bad for him."

"The two men were talking away happily, little knowing that some members of the Boxers gang had reported them to Wang, taking careful note of their appearance. In a few months time our master's brother-in-law came to grief, and Baldhead Chang knew that he was in danger; but as he had no family, he fled the next morning to Kuei Te District in Honan to look for friends. Now the wine is finished, I had better leave you to rest. If you go to the city tomorrow you must speak carefully. We people here live in a constant state of suspense, and if you make the least slip you will find your neck in the pillory."

到半個月，那花胳膊王三，就編了法子，把他爸爸也算了個強盜，用站籠站死。後來不但他閨女算了王三的媳婦，就連那點小房子，也算王三的產業。

「俺掌班的妹夫，曾在他家賣過兩回布，認得他家，知道這件事情。有一天，在飯店裏多喫了兩杯酒，就發起瘋來，同這北街上的張二禿子，一面喫酒，一面說話，說：「怎麼樣緣故，這些人怎麼樣沒個天理！」那張二禿子也是個不知利害的人，聽得高興，儘往下問，說：「他還是義和團裏的小師兄呢，那二郎關爺多少正神常在他身上，難道就不管管他嗎？」他妹夫說：「可不是呢。聽說前些時，他請孫大聖，孫大聖沒有到，還是豬八戒老爺下來的。倘若不是因為他昧良心，爲什麼孫大聖不下來，倒叫豬八戒下來呢？我恐怕他這樣壞良心，總有一天碰着大聖不高興的時候，舉起金箍棒來，給他一棒，那他就受不住了。」

「二人談得高興，不知早被他們團裏朋友報給王三，把他們倆人面貌記得爛熟。沒有數個月的工夫，

Thereupon he stood up and picked up a halfburnt incense-stick to raise the wick of the lamp, saying "I will go to bring the oil-kettle to fill up this lamp." Mr Decadent said "No need. Let's go to bed," So they separated and went to rest.

The next morning Mr. Decadent packed his baggage and told the cart-driver to carry it to the cart, while the assistant saw him out and warned him repeatedly "When you go to the city you really must not talk too much." Mr. Decadent laughed and answered "Thank you for your warning." Then the driver started the cart and drove along the southern highway. By noon they reached the city of Tsaochow and entered the North Gate. They found a hotel on the main street near the yamen, and he booked a room. A waiter came and asked what he would like for lunch and he ordered a meal and ate it. Then he went to the governor's yamen to look round. He saw red silk hanging over the gate and on the two sides there were indeed twelve pillories, but they were all empty without anybody in them, and he was surprised and thought "Could it all be false, everything that I heard along the road?" Then he strolled about for a little while and went back to the hotel.

He saw in the upper chambers many people wearing tall hats wandering in and out, while in the courtyard there rested a blue felt sedan-chair, and many carriers wearing padded coats and trousers, also in tall hats, were eating unleavened bread. There were also some men wearing uniform on which was written "Guards of Ch'eng Wu district", so he knew that the magistrate of Ch'eng Wu must be staying here. After long time he heard the servants in the upper chamber shouting "Attention:" and the carriers

把他妹夫就毀了，張二禿子知道勢頭不好，仗着他沒有家眷，天明四十五，逃往河南歸德府去找朋友去了。酒也完了，你老睡罷！明天倘若進城，千萬說話小心，俺們這裏人人都耽着三分驚險，大意一點兒，站籠就會飛到脖兒梗上來的！」

於是站起來，桌上摸了個半截綫香，把燈撥了撥，說：『我去拿油壺來添添這燈。』老殘說：『不用了，各自睡罷。』兩人分手，各自安歇。

次日早晨，老殘收檢行李，叫車夫來搬上車子；店夥送出，再三叮嚀：『進了城去，切勿多話，要緊，要緊！』老殘笑着答道：『多謝關照。』一面車夫將車子推動，向南大路進發。不過午牌時候，早已到了曹州府城。進了北門，就在府前大街，尋了一家客店，找了個廂房住下。跑堂的來問了飯菜，就照樣辦來喫過了，便到府衙門前來觀望觀望。看那大門上懸着通紅的彩紬，兩旁果真有十二個站籠，却都是空的，一個人也沒有。不覺心裏詫異道：『難道一路傳聞，都是謊話嗎？……』熬了一會兒，仍自回到店裏。

promptly carried the sedan-chair to the steps, while those who held red umbrellas raised them up, and two horses were led out from the stables. Then the red felt screen of the upper chamber was drawn aside, and a man came out wearing a crystal cap button, embroidered coat and official beads looking about fifty years old. He came down the steps, got into the sedan-chair and was immediately lifted up and carried out.

When Mr. Decadent saw that man he wondered "Why is his face so familiar? I have never been in this district before; where could I have met him?" He thought for some time but could not recall it, so he gave up thinking. Since it was still early in the day he went again to the street to ask about the administration of the District Governor, and the answer was in variably "Good", only all the people looked sad. He nodded to himself and felt that the ancient proverb 'Tyranny is more cruel than a tiger' was indeed true. Then he returned to the hotel and sat at for a while at his door. Just then the magistrate of Ch'en. Wu district came back, and when he entered the hotel he looked out from the window of his sedan-chair and his eyes met Mr. Decadent's. By that time the sedan-chair had already reached the steps. The magistrate got out of the chair and his servants let down the curtain of the chair and followed him up the steps. Mr. Decadent saw him at a distance saying a few words to one of his servants, who then ran towards his door and said to Mr. Decadent "Are you Mr T'ieh?" Mr Decadent said "Yes, How do you know my name? Who is your master?" The servant said "My master's name is Shen He has just come from the provincial capital, being appointed to the district of Ch'eng Wu. My

只見上房裏有許多戴大帽子的人出入，院子裏放了一肩藍呢大轎，許多轎夫穿了棉襖袴，也戴着大帽子，在那裏喫餅。又有幾個人穿着號衣，上寫着「城武縣民壯」字樣；心裏知道這上房住的，必是城武縣了。過了許久，見上房裏家人喊了一聲「伺候，」那轎夫便將轎子搭到階下。前頭打紅傘的，拿了紅傘；馬棚裏牽出了兩匹馬。登時上房裏紅呢簾子打起，出來了一個人，水晶頂，黻褂朝珠，年紀約在五十歲上下；從臺階上下來，進了轎子，呼的一聲，抬起出門去了。

老殘見了這人，心裏想道：『何以十分面善？我從未到曹屬來過，此人是在那裏見過的呢？』想了些時，想不出來，也就罷了。因天時尚早，復到街上訪問本府政績。竟是一口同聲說好，不過都帶有慘淡顏色，不覺暗暗點頭，深服古人「苛政猛於虎」一語，真是不錯。回到店中，在門口略為小坐，卻好那城武縣已經回來。進了店門，從玻璃窗裏朝外一看，與老殘正屬四目相對；一恍的時候，轎子已到上房階下。那城

master asks you to come over." Mr. Decadent then remembered that that man was the Archivist Sheng Tung-chào, whom he had met several times, but since he had not talked to him much he had forgotten him.

Mr. Decadent then went up and saw Mr. Sheng and they greeted each other. Mr. Sheng asked him to sit in the inner room, saying at the same time "Excuse me, I must change my clothes." Then he changed his official robes for ordinary dress, and sat down, asking "When did you come here? How long have you been here? Are you staying in this hotel?" Mr. Decadent said "I only came here today, having left the provincial capital about a week ago. When did you leave the provincial capital? Have you already been to your post?" Mr. Sheng said "I also arrived today, only having left the provincial capital three days ago. All these attendants are escorting me to my district. The day before I left the capital I heard from Mr. Yao that the Governor was very sorry when he saw that you had left, and said that he had always had great respect for scholars and thought that he could get them all; but now that he had met Mr. T'ieh who considered officialdom as floating clouds, he felt very humble by comparison. Mr. Decadent said" I have great respect for the Provincial Governor who admires talent so much; but I did not leave because I wanted to remain aloof. Firstly, I know well that my talent is slight and my scholarship superficial, and that I did not deserve so much praise; secondly, the District Governor here has a great reputation, and I wanted to see what kind of person he is. As for retiring to an 'ivory tower' I not only have not the right to do so, but no desire either. There are very few men of talent in the world, and while people of the lowest intellig.

武縣從轎子裏出來，家人放下轎簾，跟上臺階，遠遠看見他向家人說了兩句話。只見那家人即向門口跑來，那城武縣仍站在臺階上等着。家人跑到門口。向老殘道：『這位是鐵老爺麼？』老殘道：『正是，你何以知道？你貴上姓甚麼？』家人道：『小的主人姓申新從省裏出來，撫臺委署城武縣的。說請鐵老爺上房裏去坐呢。』老殘恍然。想起這人，就是文案上委員申東造，雖是會過兩三次，却未曾多有接談，故記不得了。

老殘當時上去見了東造彼此作了個揖，東造讓到裏間屋內坐下，嘴裏連稱『放肆，我換衣服。』當時將官服脫去。換了便服。分賓主坐下。問道：『補翁是幾時來的：到這裏多少天了？可是就住在這店裏嗎？』老殘道：『今日到的。出省不過六七天，就到此地了。東翁是幾時出省？到過任再來的嗎？』東造道：『兄弟也是今天到，大前天出省；這夫馬人役是接到省城去的。我出省的前一天，還聽姚雲翁說：「宮保看補翁去了，心裏着實難過。說自己一生契重名士，以爲

ence may become recluses to hide their defects, if those who really have talent enough to improve society become recluses it is against the will of Nature who bestowed such gifts upon them." Mr. Sheng said "I have always had great respect for your profound observations, and today you make me bow down with even greater respect. No wonder that Confucius did not approve the ways of ancient hermits. Incidentally, what do you think of the District Governor here?" "He is nothing but a cruel officer of the lowest type, worse than the tyrants of history" said Mr. Decadent, and Mr. Sheng nodded his head repeatedly and said "We have been hampered in our observations, but you, wandering, about as an ordinary citizen, must know the real facts. I suppose since the District Governor is so cruel, there must be many cases of injustice. How is it then that nobody appeals to the higher authorities?"

Mr. Decadent then related to him in detail what he had heard along the road, but he had only told him half when a servant came in and announced that dinner was ready. Mr. Sheng then asked him to stay for dinner, and Mr. Decadent did not decline. After dinner he resumed his talk, and when he had finished he said "I only wonder at one thing. Today when I was looking outside the governor's yamen, I saw the twelve pillories all empty, so I wonder the country talk is reliable or not." Mr. Sheng said "No, that is not the case. I just heard from the magistrate of Ho Cheh, that because the District Governor was recommended yesterday by the higher authorities for promotion and he will be made an officer of the second rank, he has suspended punishments for three days as a public celebration. Didn't you see the red silk hanging outside the gate? I heard that

無不可招致之人。今日竟遇着一個鐵君，真是浮雲富貴；反心內照，愈覺得齷齪不堪了。！」

老殘道：「宮保愛才若渴，兄弟實在欽佩的。至於出來的原故，並不是肥遯鳴高的意思。一則深知自己才疏學淺，不稱揄揚；二則因這玉太尊聲望過大，到底看看是個何等人物。至「高尚」二字，兄弟不但不敢當，且亦不屑爲。天地生才有數，若下愚蠢陋的人，高尚點也好借此藏拙；若真有點濟世之才，竟自遯世，豈不辜負天地生才之心嗎？」東造道：「屢聞至論，本極佩服；今日之說，則更五體投地。可見長沮桀溺等人，爲孔子所不取的了。只是目下在補翁看來，我們這玉太尊，究竟是何等樣人？」老殘道：「不過是下流的酷吏，又比鄧都寧成等人次一等了。」東造連連點頭。又問道：「弟等耳目有所隔闕，先生布衣遊歷，必可得其實在情形。我想太尊殘忍如此，必多冤枉。何以竟無上控的案件呢？」

老殘便將一路所聞細說起來。說得一半的時候，家人請來喫飯，東造遂留老殘同喫，老殘亦不辭讓。

the first day he suspended punishment-that was yesterday-there were still a few people not yet dead in the pillories, and they were put back into the prison." At this they both sighed, and Mr. Decadent said "You must be tired after travelling, and it is growing late, I had better go back now." Mr. Sheng said "Tomorrow evening I hope you will come over again for a chat. I have a very difficult task, on which I want your advice. I hope you will not deny me." After he had spoken they both retired for the night.

The next day when Mr. Decadent got up he saw the day was overcast, and although the north wind was not too strong he felt his padded gown very light on his body. After he had washed he bought some fried cakes for his breakfast and rather despondently wandered about the streets. He was thinking of going up the city wall to look at the distant scenery when snow began to fall, and in a short time was coming down very fast, whirling and flurrying, becoming thicker and thicker." He went back quickly to the hotel and told the hotel people to light a charcoal brazier for him. There was only one big Piece of paper left in the window, and that half torn, so that it flapped and rustled in the snow and the wind. The tiny shreds of paper at the side, although they made no sound, also fluttered incessantly, and the room seemed very chilly and desolate.

Mr. Decadent had nothing to do, for his books were still in the case and not easily accessible, so he sat there despondently. Then he felt so deeply moved that he took out pen and ink from the casket by his pillow, and wrote a poem on the wall about the District Governor. The poem was follows:

Greed is in the marrow of his bones,

喫過之後，又接着說去。說完了，便道：『我只有一事疑惑：今日在府門前瞻望，見十二個站籠都空着，恐怕鄉人之言，必有靠不住處。』東造道：『這却不然。我適在荷澤縣署中，聽說太尊是因爲昨日得了院上行知，除已補授實缺外，在大案裏又特保了他個以道員在任候補；並俟歸道員班後，賞加二品銜的保舉。所以停刑三日，讓大家賀喜。你不見衙門口掛着紅彩軸嗎？聽說停刑的頭一日，——卽是昨日——站籠上還有幾個半死不活的人，都收了監了。』彼此嘆息了一回。老殘道：『旱路勞頓，天時不早了，安息罷。』東造道：『明日晚間，還請枉駕談談，弟有極難處置之事，要得領教，還望不棄纔好！』說罷，各自歸寢。

到了次日，老殘起來，見那天色陰的很重，西北風雖不甚大，覺得棉袍子在身上，有飄飄欲仙之致。洗過臉，買了幾根油條當了點心，沒精打采的，到街上徘徊些時。正想上城牆上去眺望遠景，見那空中一片一片的飄下許多雪花來，頃刻之間，那雪便紛紛亂下，迴旋穿插，越下越緊。趕急走回店中，叫店家籠了一盆火來。那窗戶上的紙，只有一張大些的，懸空了

Impatient to achieve renown;
Thus injustice darkens the city
And his cap button is stained red with blood.
Everywhere owls hoot.
On every hill tigers roar;
For killing his people as one kills an enemy
This Governor has become a general.

Then he appended his name and his district, and after that he had lunch.

After lunch the snow was even thicker and standing by the door looking out he saw that the boughs and twigs of the trees seemed to be wrapped up in new cotton. There were several crows on the trees, drawing in their heads for fear of the cold, and ruffling their feathers for fear that the snow might gather on their bodies. He saw many sparrows taking shelter under the eaves, also drawing in their heads from the cold, and the sight of their hunger and cold was most pitiful. So he thought "These birds depend on berries and tiny insects to satisfy their hunger; but now all the insects have gone into hibernation and cannot be found, while no berries will be left after the snow. Even if tomorrow the day becomes clear and the snow melts a little, when the north wind blows the snow will turn to ice again, and they will still be without food and have to go hungry till next Spring." Thinking like this he felt very sorry for the birds; but then he thought "Although these birds are cold and hungry, nobody will shoot them or harm them, nor cast nets to catch them. They are only cold and hungry for a season, but by next Spring they will be happy again. But as for the people of this district, the crops have not been good these years; moreover they have such a

半截，經了雪的潮氣，迎着風霍鐸霍鐸價響。旁邊零碎小紙，雖沒有聲音，却不住的亂搖。房裏便覺得陰風森森，異常慘淡。

老殘坐着無事，書又在箱子裏不便取，只是悶悶的坐着。不禁有所感觸，遂從枕頭匣內取出筆硯來，在牆上題詩一首，專詠玉賢之事。詩曰：

得失淪肌髓，因之急事功。冤埋城闕暗，血染頂珠紅！處處鴟鵂雨，山山虎豹風。殺民如殺賊。太守是元戎。下署「江南徐州鐵英題」七個字。寫完之後便喫午飯。

飯後，那雪越發下得大了；站在房門口朝外一看，只見大小樹枝，彷彿都用簇新的棉花裹着似的。樹上有幾個老鴉，縮着頸項避寒；不住的抖擻翎毛，怕雪堆在身上。又見許多麻雀兒，躲在屋檐底下，也把頭縮着怕冷；其飢寒之狀，殊覺可憫。因想：『這些鳥雀，無非靠着草木上結的實，並些小蟲蟻兒充饑度命。現在各樣蟲蟻，自然是都入蟄，看不着的了。就是那草木之實，經這雪一蓋，那裏還有呢？倘若明天晴了，雪路爲化一化，西北風一吹，雪又變做了冰，仍然是找

cruel governor that he often takes them and punishes them as bandits, killing them in the pillories, so that they are too afraid even to speak. Thus they have fear in addition to their hunger and cold, so are they not worse off than the birds?" Thereupon he could not help shedding tears. Then he looked again at the crows who suddenly gave a few cries, as if they were not complaining of their cold or hunger but showing that they still had freedom of speech and at that his anger surged up until he felt like having the Governor killed to immediately to vent his indignation.

His thoughts were wandering like this when a blue felt sedan chair passed outside the door with attendants, so he knew that Magistrate Shen had come back from paying his official calls, and he thought "Why not write down what I have seen and heard in a letter, and tell the Provincial Governor about it?" Accordingly he took out paper and envelope from his case, and started writing; but no sooner did he start writing than the ink from the ink-stone froze into solid ice, so that he had to warm it with his breath as he wrote. After covering only two sheets of paper it was already late, and when he warmed the ink-stone his pen became frozen, and when he warmed his pen the ink became frozen again. Thus each time he warmed the ink he could only write four or five words, and in this way much time was wasted. Just as he was occupied with this the day became dark and he could not see what he was writing, for the day was overcast so that it became dark earlier than usual. He called the hotel people to bring a lamp, and after he had shouted for a long time, the waiter brought a lamp and came in, huddled up with cold, saying at the same time "It's freezing." He put down the lamp and blew several

不着，豈不要餓到明春嗎？」想到這裏，覺得替這些鳥雀愁苦的受不得，轉念又想：『這些鳥雀雖然凍餓，却沒有人放槍傷害他，又沒有什麼網羅來捉他；不過暫時饑寒，撐到明年開春，便快活不盡了。若像這曹州府的百姓呢：近幾年的年歲，也就很不好；又有這們一個酷虐的父母官，動不動就捉了去當強盜辦，用站籠站殺，嚇的連一句話也說不出來；於饑寒之外，又多一層懼怕。豈不比這鳥雀還要苦嗎？』想到這裏，不覺落下淚來。又見那老鴉，有一陣，刮！刮！的叫了幾聲，彷彿他不是號寒啼饑，却是爲有言論自由的樂趣，來驕這曹州府百姓似的。想到此處，不覺怒髮衝冠，恨不得立刻將玉賢殺掉，方出心頭之恨。

正在胡思亂想，只見門外來了一乘藍呢轎，並執事人等，知是申東造拜客回店了。因想：『我爲甚麼不將這所見所聞的，寫封信告訴張宮保呢？……』於是從枕箱裏取出信紙信封來，提筆便寫。那知剛纔題筆，硯臺上的墨早已凍成堅冰了。於是呵一點，寫一點，寫了不過兩張紙，天已很不早了。硯臺上呵開來，筆又凍了；筆呵開來，硯臺上又凍了；呵一回，不過寫

times at the rolled paper torch he carried in his fingers before he could light it. The oil in the lamp had just been poured in, but was already frozen in coils like a snail, so when he lit the wick it would not burn. That man said "Wait a while for the oil to melt and it will be bright." He raised the wick and thrust his hands back into his sleeves for warmth, standing there watching the lamp, almost out. At first the light of the lamp was no bigger than a pea, but gradually the oil reached it and it became as big as a bean. The servant suddenly raised his head and saw the words written on the wall, and in great alarm he said "Did you write this, sir? What have you written? You will get into trouble. This is no joke." Then he turned his head swiftly to look outside, and when he saw there was nobody there he said "If you are not careful, you will lose your life, and we shall be involved too." Mr. Decadent laughed and said "Don't be frightened. I have put my name under it. It doesn't concern you."

As he was speaking a man came in wearing a cap with a red tassel, who called "Mr. T'ieh." The waiter then went out looking dubious, while the man who came in said "My master asks you to go over and have dinner, sir." It was the magistrate's servant, and Mr. Decadent said to him "Please ask your master to start the meal. I have already ordered my dinner, and it will soon be coming. Give my thanks to your master." That man said "My master says the hotel meal is not good, and we have had two pheasants sent to us which are already being sliced, besides some slices of mutton. And he asks you to come over and try the table-stove. My master says if you really refuse to come, sir, he will order the dinner to be brought to this room, I think you

四五個字。所以耽擱工夫。正在兩頭忙着，天色又暗起來，更看不見，因為陰天，所以比平常更黑得早。於是喊店家拿盞燈來。喊了許久，店家方拿了一盞燈，縮手縮腳的進來，嘴裏還喊道：『好冷呀！』把燈放下，手指縫裏夾了個紙煤子，吹了好幾次，纔吹着。那燈裏是新倒上的凍油，堆的像大螺絲殼似的，點着了還是不亮。店家道：『等一會，油化開，就亮了。』撥了撥燈，把手還縮到袖子裏去，站着看那燈滅不滅。起初燈光不過有大黃豆大，漸漸的得了油，就有小蠶豆大了。店家忽然抬頭看見牆上題的字，驚惶道：『這是你老寫的嗎？寫的是啥？可別惹出亂子呀！這可不是頑兒的！』趕緊又回過頭朝外看看，沒有人，又說道：『弄的不好，要壞命的！我們還要受連累呢！』老殘笑道：『不用害怕。底下寫着我的名字呢，不干你事的。』

說着，外面進來了一個人，戴着紅纓帽子，叫了一聲鐵老爺，那店家就趑趄起去的去了。那進來的人道：『敝上請鐵老爺去喫飯呢。』原來就是申東造的家人。老殘道：『請你們老爺自用罷，我這裏已經叫

had better go, sir. We have a big brazier in that room, four or five times as big as the one here, and it makes the room much warmer. Besides it is more convenient for the servants serving the meals. Please oblige us with this favour." So Mr. Decadent had to go over.

When Mr. Sheng saw him he asked "What were you doing in your room? It is very oppressive snowy weather: let us drink two cups of wine. Today somebody sent me some fresh pheasants, and since they are excellent cooked in a table-stove, I shall use this gift from others to entertain you." Then they took their seats and the servant brought in the sliced pheasant, some pink and some white, looking most appetising, and it was even more delicious when cooked in a table-stove. Mr. Sheng asked "Do you notice anything special about these pheasants?" Mr. Decadent said "They have a peculiar fragrance. Why is it?" Mr. Sheng said "These pheasants come from Peach Flower Mountain in Fei Ch'eng district. In that mountain there are many pine trees and the pheasants are fed on the pine nuts; thus they have a peculiar fragrance. They are commonly called Pine Flower Pheasants, and they are not easily procurable even here." Mr. Decadent praised the pheasant, and then they brought in the dishes from the kitchen to go with the rice. When they finished their dinner Mr. Sheng asked him to go to the inner room to sit by the fire and drink tea.

Mr. Shen suddenly noticed that Mr. Decadent was wearing a padded gown, and asked "In such cold weather why are you wearing a cotton gown?" Mr. Decadent said "I don't feel the cold at all. I have never worn fur since I was young, and I feel that a padded cotton gown is warmer

他們去做飯，一會兒就來了，說我謝謝罷。」那人道：「敝上道，店裏飯不中喫，我們那裏有人送的兩隻山雞，已經都片出來了；又片了些羊肉片子，說請鐵老爺，務必過去喫火鍋子呢。敝上說，如鐵老爺一定不肯去，敝上就叫把飯開到這屋裏來吃。我看還是請老爺過去罷，那屋子裏有大火盆，有這屋裏火盆四五個大，煖和得多呢；家人們又得伺候。請你老方便家人罷。」老殘無法，只好過去，申東造見了，說：「補翁在那屋裏做什麼？恁大雪天，我們來喝兩杯酒罷。今兒有人送來極新鮮的山雞，燙着吃，很好的，我就借花獻佛了。」說着，便入了座。家人端上山雞片，果然有紅有白，煞是好看；燙着吃，味更香美。東造道：「先生吃得出有點異味嗎？」老殘道：「果然有點清香。是什麼道理？」東造道：「這雞出在肥城縣桃花山裏頭的。這山裏松樹極多，這山雞專好吃松花松實，所以有點清香，俗名叫做「松花雞。」雖在此地，亦很不容易得的。」老殘贊嘆了兩句。廚房裏飯菜也就端上桌子。兩人吃過了飯，東造約到裏間房裏吃茶，向火。

even than your fox skin." Mr. Shen said "No, that is not good." and he ordered the servant: "Take out my white fox skin from that narrow leather case, and carry it to Mr. T'ieh's room." Mr. Decadent said "There is no need. I am not being polite. Do you know of any street physician in the world wearing a fox skin gown?" "There is no need for you to sound your clapper on the streets" said Mr. Shen "Why are you so eccentric? Since you don't look down on me, and consider me as a friend, I want to say something impolite without caring whether you are annoyed or not. Yesterday I heard you condemning those who are recluses, saying that talented people are few, and one should not think too lightly of himself. I thoroughly endorse that saying, but your profession is against your sound opinion. The Provincial Governor urged you repeatedly to become an official, but you ran away during the night, insisting on coming away to sound your clapper. May I ask what difference there is between you and the ancient sage who dug a hole in the wall to escape, or the one who washed his ears and refused to listen to others? My words may offend you by their frankness, but consider for yourself whether I am right or not."

Mr. Decadent said "Of course sounding my clapper does not help the society; but does becoming an official help the society? I would like to ask you a question: you are already the magistrate of Ch'eng Wu district ruling over thirty miles and ten thousand people; but what have you done to help the people? I suppose you are confident in your heart, but will you tell me some of your policies? I know that you have been an official in two or three posts already, and may I ask what outstanding reforms you have made in the past?"

東造忽然看見老殘穿着一件棉袍子，說道：『這種冷天，怎麼還穿棉袍子呢？』老殘道：『毫不覺冷。我們從小兒不穿皮袍子的人，這棉袍子的力量，恐怕比你們的狐皮還要暖和些呢。』東造道：『那究竟不妥。』——叫家人——『你們把我那扁皮箱裏，一件一裹圓的白狐袍子，取出來送到鐵老爺屋子裏去！』老殘道：『千萬不必，我決非客氣，你想天下有個穿狐皮袍子搖串鈴的嗎？』東造道：『你那串鈴本可以不搖，何必矯俗到這個田地呢。承蒙不棄，拿我兄弟還當個人，我有兩句放肆的話要說，不管你先生惱我不惱我。昨兒聽先生鄙薄那肥遯鳴高的人，說道天地生才有限，不宜妄自菲薄。這話，我兄弟五體投地的佩服。然而先生所做的事情，却與至論有點違背。宮保一定要先生出來做官，先生却半夜裏跑了，一定要出來搖串鈴，試問與那「鑿坏而遁，」「洗耳不聽」的，有何分別呢？兄弟話未免鹵莽，有點冒犯，請先生想一想，是不是呢？』

老殘道：『搖串鈴誠然無濟於世道，難道做官就有濟於世道嗎？請問先生：此刻已經是城武縣一百里

Mr. Shen said "That's not fair. We ordinary people can only try to muddle along, but you have such great talent and wisdom that it is really a pity that you will not come out to do public work. People who have no talent insist on becoming officials, and people who have talent insist on not becoming officials. This is the greatest pity in the world."

Mr. Decadent said "That is not the case, I would say that it matters not the least if people of no talent become officials; the trouble arises when people who have talent want to be officials. Take Governor Yu, for instance. Isn't he a talented man? But because he wanted to be an official at all costs, and wants to be promoted quickly, he acts against Nature and against principle. However his reputation is so good that in a few years time he will become a great official, and the greater he becomes the more harm he will do. When he governs a district he injures the district, when he governs a province he will cripple the province, and when he governs an empire he will destroy the empire. Thus do talented people do more harm when they become officials or untalented people? If he were to knock about like me, sounding a clapper, people would not ask him to cure a serious illness, and if the illness were slight he would not kill people; or supposing he killed one person by his prescriptions every year, then even if he were to be a physician for ten thousand years, he would kill less people than during his period of office as Governor of this district." If you want to know what Mr. Shen said to this, you must read the next chapter.

萬民的父母了，其可以有濟於民處何在呢？先生必有成竹在胸，何妨賜教一二呢？我知先生在前已做過兩三任官的，請教已過的善政，可有出類拔萃的事蹟呢？」東造道：「不是這們說。像我們這些庸材，只好混混罷了。閣下如此宏材大略，不出來做點事情，實在可惜！無才者，抵死要做官；有才者，抵死不做官；此正是天地間第一憾事。」

老殘道：「不然。我說無才的要做官，很不要緊，正壞在有才的要做官。你想這個玉太尊，不是個有才的嗎？只爲過於要做官，且急於做大官，所以傷天害理的做到這樣。而且政聲又如此其好，怕不數年之間，就要方面兼圻的嗎？官愈大，害愈甚：守一府，則一府傷；撫一省，則一省殘；宰天下，則天下死。由此看來，請教還是有才的做官害大呢？還是無才的做官害大呢？倘若他也像我搖個串鈴子混混，正經病，人家不要他治，些小病痛，也死不了人。即使他一年醫死一個，歷一萬年，還抵不上他一任曹州府害的人數呢！」未知申東造又有何說，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER VII.

IT is said that Mr. Decadent and Shen Tung-chao were discussing the Governor and how it was just because he was talented and wanted quick promotion that he committed so many acts of injustice then they both sighed. Mr. Shen said "Yesterday I said I had something important to discuss with you in private, and it is about this very thing. You consider, sir, what a tyrant this man is, and I have the misfortune to be under him. To work according to his wishes would be more than I could endure, but I see no good means of doing otherwise. Now you are rich in experience, you have 'tasted all dangers and difficulties and know the people's heart', so you must have some good solution which I beg you to divulge." Mr. Decadent said "When you know the difficulty of a task, then it will be comparatively easy to perform. Since you ask for my humble opinion, may I enquire first as to your intentions? If you want to win the favor of your superior officers, by impressing them and compelling their attention, then you will have to follow the methods of the governor, that is to say 'force the people to become robbers.' But if you think of your position as one of trust and want to 'champion the people,' there is another method which is to 'change the robbers into good citizens.' If your official position were slightly higher and you controlled a wider area, this would be very easy to accomplish; but when you have only one district, and that not a very rich one, then there are bound to be difficulties. Even so,

第 七 章

話說老殘與申東造議論玉賢，正爲有才亟於做官，所以傷害天理，至於如此。彼此嘆息一回。東造道：『正是，我昨日說有要事與先生密商，就是爲此。先生想此公殘忍至於此極，兄弟不幸偏又在他屬下。依他做，實在不忍；不依他做，又實無良法。先生閱歷最多，所謂「險阻艱難，備嘗之矣；民之情僞，盡知之矣；」必有良策，願有以教我！』老殘道：『知難則易者至矣。閣下既不恥下問，弟先須請教宗旨何如？若求在上官面前討好，做得烈烈轟轟，有聲有色，則只有依玉公辦法，所謂「逼民爲盜」也。若要顧念「父母官」三字，求「爲民除害」，亦有「化盜爲民」之法。若官階稍大，轄境稍寬，是容易辦的。若止一縣之事，缺分又清苦，就未免有些難辦了。然亦非不能也。』東造道：『自然以「爲民除害」爲主。果能使地方安靜，雖無不次之遷，要亦不至於凍餒。子孫飯吃

it is not impossible." Mr. Shen said "Naturally my aim is to 'champion the people.' If I can secure peace for my district, even though I am not promoted I shall not suffer from hunger or cold, and what is the use of increasing one's inheritance for one's children? But the emolument of this post is slight, and although my predecessor kept fifty police, even so there were many cases of robbery, so that he used too much official money, and that was why he lost his position. My feeling is that to spend money to secure peace for the locality would be worth doing; but if I fail in this, my work will have been in vain." Mr. Decadent said "To keep fifty police would certainly cost too much. But with regard to your official salary, what sum could you raise without causing a deficit?" "A thousand taels would not cause a deficit" said Mr. Shen.

"In that case" said Mr. Decadent "there is a way. If you will just raise one thousand three hundred taels of silver every year, and not interfere with my way of spending it, I will give you a plan and guarantee that you will not have a single case of robbery in your district. Of if you do, I guarantee that the robbers will be caught at once. What do you think?" Mr. Shen said "If you will help me in this I shall be most grateful." Mr. Decadent said "It would be no use going myself; but I will tell you an excellent plan." "But if you don't go" said the other "who will carry out your plan?"

"I am just going to recommend you a man" said Mr. Decadent, "But you must on no account slight him for if you do, he will immediately leave you, and then your case will be worse than before. His name is Liu Jen-fu; he is from P'ing Yin district, and he lives in Peach Flower

他做甚麼呢？但是缺分太清苦，前任養小隊五十名，盜案仍是疊出。加以虧空官款，因此呈誤去官。弟思如賠累，而地方得安靜，尚可設法彌補。若俱不可得，算是爲何事呢？」老殘道：「五十名小隊，所費誠然太多。但以此缺論，究能籌款若干，便不致賠累呢？」東造道：「籌一千金，則尚不致賠累。」

老殘道：「如此，這事却有個辦法了。閣下一年籌一千三百金，却不用管我如何辦法。我可以代畫一策，包你境內沒有一個盜案。倘有盜案，且可以包你頃刻便獲。閣下以爲何如？」東造道：「能得先生去爲我幫忙，我就百拜的感激了。」老殘道：「我無庸去，只是教閣下個至美極良的法則。」東造道：「閣下不去，這法則又有誰能行呢？」

老殘道：「正爲薦一個行此法則的人。惟此人千萬不可怠慢，若怠慢此人，彼必立刻便去；去後禍必更烈。此人姓劉，號仁甫，卽是此地平陰縣人，家住在平陰縣西南桃花山裏面。」

『此人十四五歲時，在嵩山少林寺學拳棒，學了些時，覺得徒有虛名，無甚出奇制勝處。於是奔走江湖，將近十年，在四川峨眉山上遇見了一個和尚，武

Mountain, southwest of the town. When he was some fourteen years old he studied boxing in the Shao Lin Temple in Sung Mountain. After some time he felt that although he had won fame he was not really proficient in the art, so he led a vagabond life all over the world for ten years, and when he was in Omei Mountain in Szechuan he met a monk whose boxing surpassed all others; so he became his pupil and learned from him. He asked the monk where he had learnt his art, and the monk replied "In the Shao Lin Temple." At that he was greatly surprised, and said "I was there for four or five years, but I did not see anybody who boxed well. From whom, then, did you learn?" The monk said "Although this form of boxing comes from the Shao Lin Temple, I did not learn it in the temple itself, for this form is already unknown there. Of the two styles of boxing you have learnt, one comes from Dharma, the founder of the school, and the other from his successor Shen Kuaug. When they first taught boxing it was intended for monks only, so that by constant practice they might become healthy and vigorous; for when they went for pilgrimages in the mountains in search of holy men, they might meet wild beasts or robbers, and monks were not allowed to carry weapons; so they learned this boxing as a means of self-defence. Moreover with their sinews taut and their muscles firm they could better endure cold and hunger; for a traveling monk, wandering in wild mountains and desolate valleys in search of holy men, could not expect to be provided with adequate food and lodging. That is why the founders of Buddhism taught this style of boxing. Later this Shao Lin type of boxing became famous and many outsiders flocked to learn it; but these people afterwards

功絕倫，他就拜他爲師；學了一套太祖神拳，一套少祖神拳。因請教這和尚拳法從那裏得來的，和尚說是少林寺。他就大爲驚訝，說：「徒弟在少林寺四五年，見沒有一個出色拳法；師父從那一個學的呢？」那和尚道：「這是少林寺的拳法，却不是從少林寺學來的；現在少林寺裏的拳法，久已失傳了。你所學的太祖拳，就是達摩傳下來的。那少祖拳，就是神光傳下來的。當初傳下這個拳法來的時候，專爲和尚們練習了這拳，身體可以結壯，精神可以悠久；若當朝山訪道的時候，單身走路，或遇虎豹，或遇強人，和尚家又不作帶兵器，所以這拳法，專爲保護生命的。筋骨強壯，肌肉堅固，便可以忍耐凍餓。你想行脚僧，在荒山野壑裏訪求高人古德，於宿食二字，一定難以周全的。——此是太祖少祖傳下拳法來的美意了。那知後來少林寺拳法出了名，外邊來學的日多，學出去的人，也有做强盜的，也有奸淫人家婦女的，屢有所聞。因此在現在這老和尚以前四五代上的個老和尚，就將這正經拳法收起不傳，只用些外面光不管事的拳法，敷衍門面而已。我這拳法，是從漢中府裏一個古德學來的，若能認真修練，將來可得到甘鳳池的位分。」

either became robbers or debauched people's wives, and there were no few cases of this. Therefore the old monks of the last four or five generations have ceased teaching the real boxing, simply giving demonstrations of some showy but ineffectual styles. My boxing was learnt from a hermit in Han Chung district, and if I practice it with all my heart, I shall attain superhuman powers."

Accordingly Liu Jen-fu remained three years in Szechuan and learned all that the monk could teach. That was the time of the T'ai P'ing rebellion, and when he left Szechuan he enlisted in the government forces. At that time, of the two government armies one favoured Hunanese and the other Anhuei men, so that people from other provinces were not fairly treated, but were only given minor posts in which they had no real power. Liu Jen-fu belonged neither to Hunan nor to Anhuei, so nobody welcomed him, and in spite of his exceptional gifts he was only given the rank of captain. Later, when the rebellion was suppressed, he had no inclination to remain at his post, so he returned home and farmed a few acres of land to support himself. In his leisure time he would wander about the two provinces of Honan and Shantung, and all the people who studied athletics in these two provinces knew his fame; but he would not take any pupils. Even when he was certain that a man was reliable, he would still be very careful about teaching him a few strokes. Not one of the athletes of the two provinces was a match for him, and they all stood in awe of him.

"If you make this man your guest, give him a hundred taels of silver every month and let him spend it as he thinks best. He will probably only need some ten police to carry

『劉仁甫在四川住了三年，盡得其傳。當時正是粵匪擾亂的時候，他從四川出來，就在湘軍淮軍營盤裏出過力的。因是時兩軍，湘軍必須湖南人，淮軍必須安徽人，方有照應。若別省人，不過敷衍了事，得個把小保舉而已，大權是不會有的。劉仁甫既不是湖南人，又不是安徽人，因此就沒人照應他。雖然是本領高強，却只保舉到個都司。後來軍事漸平，他也就無心戀棧，回轉家鄉，種了幾畝田，聊以度日。閒暇無事，在這齊豫兩省隨便遊行。這兩省練武功的人，無不知他的名氣，他却不肯傳授徒弟。若是深知這人一定安分的，來教他幾手拳棒，也十分慎重的。所以這兩省有武藝的，全敵他不過，都懼怕他。』

『若將此人延爲上賓，將這每月一百兩交付此人，聽其如何應用。大約他只要招十名小隊，供奔走之役，每人月餉六兩，其餘四十兩，供應往來豪傑酒水之資，也就够了。大概這河南山東直隸三省，及江蘇安徽的兩個北半省，共爲一局。此局內的強盜，計分大小兩種：大盜係有頭領，有號令，有法律的。而且其中有本領的甚多。小盜則隨時隨地無賴之徒，及失業的頑民，胡亂搶劫，既無人幫助，又無槍火兵器，搶過之

out his orders, each of them with a monthly salary of six taels of silver. The remaining forty taels will be enough for him to entertain guests. The three provinces of Honan, Shantung and Hopei, together with the northern parts of Kiangsu and Anhuei, form one uni; within which the robbers can be divided into two categories. There are the great robbers who have their leaders, their rules and regulations, and among whom are many able men; and there are the petty robbers who are amateur rogues and men out of work, who rob without plan, backing or proper weapons, and after their robbery either drink or gamble, so that they are very easily caught. If you take the robbers arrested by the Governor, about ninety-five percent of them are innocent people, and the other five percent are those petty thieves; while as for the great robbers, not only their leaders but even their accomplices escape capture by the Governor.

“Nevertheless great robbers are easy to deal with, for those people in the capital, no matter whether they carry one hundred or two hundred thousand taels of silver in their travel, only need one or two guards to ensure its safety along the road. You might say that when there are such large sums, if one or two hundred robbers gathered together to plunder the convoy, each could still profit greatly; how is it then that one or two guards are a match for them? But there is a tradition among the great robbers that they must not harm these professional guards. So when these guards set out, they have their names put on their carts, and they have to make certain signs along the road, and once these signs are made, even if they meet great robbers, both sides will simply pay their respects to the other, but they will not come into conflict. The great robbers know all these

後，不是酗酒，便是賭博，最容易犯案的。譬如玉太尊所辦的人，大約十分中九分半是良民，半分是這些小盜。若論那些大盜，無論頭目人物，就是他們的羽翼，也不作興有一個被玉太尊捉着的呢。

『但是大盜却容易相與，如京中保鏢的，無論十萬二十萬銀子，只須一兩個人，便可保得一路無事。試問如此鉅款，就聚了一二百強盜搶去，也很够享用的，難道這一兩個鏢司務，就敵得過他們嗎？只因爲大盜相傳有這個規矩，不作興害鏢局的。所以凡保鏢的車上，有他的字號出門，要叫個口號。這口號喊出，那大盜就覷面碰着，彼此打個招呼，他決不動手的。鏢局幾家字號，大盜都知道的，大盜有幾處窩巢，鏢局也是知道的。倘若他的羽翼，到了有鏢局的所在，進門打個暗號，他們就知道是那一路的朋友，當時必須留着喝酒吃飯，臨行還要送他三二百個錢的盤川。若是大頭目，就須儘力應酬了。——這就叫做江湖上的規矩。』

『我方纔說這個劉仁甫，江湖上是大有名的，京城裏鏢局上請過他幾次，他都不肯去，情願埋名隱姓，做個農夫。若是此人來時，待以上賓之禮，彷彿貴

professional guards, and the professional guards know all the haunts of the great robbers. When a great robber's friend reaches a place where there is a professional guard, he has only to make a sign and the guard will know where he comes from, and will have to entertain him with feasts, and when he leaves he will have to give him two or three hundred coins as travelling expenditure; While in the case of a great robber chief there has to be special entertainment. This is the law of the underworld.

"This Liu Jen-fu whom I mentioned is very famous in the under-world, and the professional guards in the capital invited him several times to join them; but he would not, preferring to remain obscure as a farmer. If he comes to you and you treat him as your guest of honour it will be like having a professional guard over your district. In his leisure time he will wander about in the teashops and restaurants, and will recognise immediately all those travellers who belong to the robbers' gangs. He will pay for a few dinners and teas, and in less than a fortnight all the great robber chiefs in the various districts will know that he is there, and they will immediately order their followers that since such a man is in that place, there must be no disturbances there. The forty taels of silver left over every month, of which I spoke, is for this purpose. As for those petty robbers, they have no law, and act on the spur of the moment. There will certainly be people to inform of their whereabouts in nearby places, so that before those who have been robbed come to complain his followers will already have arrested the culprits. Even if robbery is committed in more distant places, he will have his friends there too, who will arrest the robbers for him. Thus no matter where the

縣開了一個保護本縣的鏢局。他無事時，在街上茶館飯店裏坐坐，這過往的人，凡是江湖上朋友，他到眼便知，隨便會幾個茶飯東道，不銷十天半個月，各處大盜頭目，就全曉得了。立刻便要傳出號令：某人立足之地，不許打攪的。每月所餘的那四十兩，就是給他做這個用處的。至於小盜，他本無門徑，隨意亂做。就近處，自有人來暗中報信；失主尙未來縣報案，他的手下人，倒已先將盜犯獲住了。若是稍遠的地方做了案子，沿路也有他們的朋友，替他暗中捕下去；無論走到何處，俱捉得到的。所以要十名小隊子，其實只要四五個應手的人，已經足用了。那多餘的五六個人，爲的是本縣轎子前頭擺擺威風，或者接差送差跑信等事用的。』

東造道：『如閣下所說，自然是極妙的法則。但是此人既不肯應鏢局之聘，若是兄弟衙署裏請他，恐怕也不肯來，如之奈何？』

老殘道：『只是你去請他，自然他不肯來的。所以我須詳詳細細寫封信去，並拿救一縣無辜良民的話打動他，自然他就肯來了。况他與我交情甚厚，我苦勸他，一定肯的。因爲我二十幾歲的時候，看天下將來

robbers go, they will be caught. In this way he will only need some ten police, and in actual fact he will only make use of four or five of them; the other five will be to lend dignity to your official sedan-chair, or to carry out your commissions."

Mr. Shen said "What you have described is indeed an excellent scheme; but if he would not join the guards in the capital I am afraid that when I invite him he may not come. What shall we do?" "If you ask him he certainly will not come" said Mr. Decadent, "therefore I shall have to write a long letter on your behalf, begging him to save the lives of the innocent people of this district and then he will come. Besides, we are very good friends, and if I ask him he will come to oblige me. When I was in my twenties I felt that the world was entering upon a period of confusion, so I looked out for talented men and had many friends who studied military science; and when he was in Honan we were sworn friends, pledging that if one of us were asked by the government to take up office, we would come out together. At that time I had many different kinds of friends, some of whom studied political geography, some military strategy, some engineering and some athletics; and among the latter he was unequalled. Later we all realised that those who administer public affairs are a different type of people, and all that we had learned was useless; so then we all turned to different professions to earn our living, casting our ambition into the Eastern Ocean. However our former friendship still remains, so that if I ask him, he will certainly come."

When Mr. Shen heard this he bowed and thanked him many times, saying "Since I accepted this post, I have not

一定有大亂，所以極力留心將才，談兵的朋友頗多，此人當年在河南時，我們是莫逆之交，相約倘若國家有用我輩的日子，凡我同人，俱要出來相助辦理的。其時講輿地，講陣圖，講製造，講武功的，各樣朋友都有。此君便是講武功的巨擘。後來大家都明白了，治天下的，又是一種人才；若是我輩所講所學，全是無用的。因此各人都弄個謀生之道，混飯喫去，把這雄心便拋入東洋大海去了。雖如此說，然當時的交情義氣，斷不會敗壞的。所以我寫封信去，一定肯來的。』

東造聽了，連連作揖道謝，說：『我自從挂牌安署斯缺，未嘗一夜安眠，今日得聞這番議論，如夢初醒，如病初愈，真是萬千之幸！但是這封信，是派個何等樣人送去方妥呢？』老殘道：『必須有個親信朋友，吃這一趟辛苦纔好。若隨便叫個差人送去，便有輕慢他的意思，他一定不肯出來，那就連我都要遭怪了。』東造連連說：『是的，是的。我這裏有個族弟，明天就到的，可以煩他去一趟。先生的信幾時寫呢？就費心寫起來最好。』

老殘道：『明日一天不出門。我此刻正寫一長函致張宮保，託姚雲翁轉呈，爲細述玉太尊政績的；大

had one night's sound sleep; but after hearing your words today I feel as if awaking from a bad dream or recovering from an illness, and count myself most fortunate. But what sort of man should we choose as messenger to take the letter to him?" "You must have a good friend who will undertake the hard journey" said Mr. Decadent, "for if you just send an ordinary runner, it will seem that you look down on him, and then he will not come, and I shall be blamed." "Yes, yes. I have a cousin coming here tomorrow; I shall ask him to go" said Mr. Shen "When Will you write the letter? I should be grateful if you would write it quickly." Mr. Decadent said "Tomorrow I am staying all day. At the moment I am writing a long letter to Provincial Governor Chang, care of Mr. Yao, to inform him in detail of the work of the District Governor here. I shall finish that letter tomorrow, and then I will have the other one written too. The day after tomorrow I am going away. "Where are you going?" asked Mr. Shen and he said "I want to go to Tung Chiang district to visit the private library of Mr. Liu Hsiao-huei, and see his Sung and Yuan dynasty editions. I shall go back to Tsinan for the New Year, but where I shall go after that I do not know myself. The night is growing late; we had better go to bed." So saying Mr. Decadent got up to go, and Mr. Shen told his servant to light a lantern to see him back to his room. But when they lifted the screen the earth and sky seemed to have merged into one, for the snow had made everything white, and so bright was the snow that it dazzled the eyes. The snow beneath the steps had already fallen some seven or eight inches deep, making it impossible to pass. Only the path to the main gate was often swept, because people were

約也要明天寫完，並此信一總寫起，我後天就要動身了。』東造問：『後天往那裏去？』老殘答說：『先往東昌府訪柳小惠家的收藏，想看看他的宋元板書；隨後即回濟南省城過年。再後的行蹤，連我自己也不知道了。今日夜已深了，可以睡罷。』

說着，老殘便立起身來。東造教家人打個手照，送老殘回去。揭起門簾一看，只見天地一色，那雪早已下的混混沌沌價白，覺得照的眼睛發脹似的。那階下的雪，已有了七八寸深，走不過去了。只有這上房到大門口的一條路，常有人來往，所以不住的掃。那到廂房裏的一條路，已看不出路影，同別處一樣的高了。東造叫人趕忙鏟出一條路來，讓老殘回房。推開門來，燈已滅了。上房送下一個燭臺，兩支紅燭，取火點起。再想寫信，那筆硯竟違抗萬分，不遵調度，只好睡了。

到了次日，雪雖已止，寒氣却比昨兒更甚。起來喊店家秤了五斤木炭，升了一個大火盆，又叫買了幾張桑皮紙，把那破窗戶糊了。頃刻之間，房裏煖氣迴和，非昨日的氣象了。遂把硯池烘化，將昨日未曾寫完的信，詳細寫完封好；又將致劉仁甫的信亦寫

constantly passing there; but the path to Mr. Decadent's room could no longer be seen, for it was level with the rest of the ground. Mr. Shen quickly sent men to shovel out a path for Mr. Decadent to go back to his room. When he opened the door his lamp was already out, and Mr. Shen sent him a candlestick and two red candles. He lit a candle and wanted to write a letter, but the pen and ink were frozen and refused to obey his orders, so there was nothing for it but to go to bed.

The next day, although the snow had stopped, the cold was even more intense. When Mr. Decadent got up he ordered the hotel people to buy him five catties of charcoal and had a large brazier lit. He also bought several sheets of white paper and pasted up the broken windows, so that after a little while the room became warm, unlike the previous day. Then he melted the ink, finished the letter he had started the preceding day, put it in envelope and sealed it. He also wrote a letter to Liu Jen-fu and gave them both to Mr. Shen sent the first letter to Mr. Yao by special messenger to the post station; at the same time he put the letter to Liu Jen-fu in the small casket by his pillow. By this time the kitchen had prepared a meal and they had their lunch and chatted for a short time. Just as they were speaking a servant came in to announce "The second master and the secretaries have arrived. They are staying in the West wing, and when they have had a wash they will come over." After a little while there entered a man of less than forty, who had not yet grown a beard. He was wearing an old blue silk fur gown, black fur jacket and fur shoes soiled by the slush. This man came in briskly and greeted Mr. Shen who introduced him saying "This is my

畢；一總送到上房；交東造收了。東造一面將致姚雪翁的一函，加個馬封，送往驛站；一面將劉仁甫的一函，送入枕頭箱內。廚房已開了飯來，二人一同喫過，又復清談片時。

正說話間，只見家人來報：『二老爺同師爺們都到了，住在西邊店裏；洗完臉，就過來的。』停了一回，只見門外來了一個不到四十歲模樣的人，尙未留鬚，穿了件舊寧絀二藍的大毛皮袍子，元色長袖皮馬褂，蹬了一雙絨靴；已經被雪泥漫了幫子了，慌忙走進堂屋，先替乃兄作了個揖。東造就說：『這就是舍弟，號子平。』回過臉來說：『這是鐵補殘先生。』申子平走近一步，作了個揖，說：『久仰的很。』東造便問：『喫過飯了沒有？』子平說：『纔到，洗了臉就過來的，未曾吃飯。』東造說：『吩咐廚房裏做二老爺的飯。』子平道：『可以不必，停一刻，還是同他們老夫子一塊吃罷。』家人上來回說：『廚房裏已經吩咐，叫他們送一桌飯去，讓二老爺同師爺們吃呢。』那時又有一個家人揭了門簾，拿了好幾個大紅全帖進來，老殘知道是師爺們來見東家的，就趁勢走了。

到了晚飯之後，申東造又將老殘請到上房裏，將

cousin Shen Tze-p'ing." Then he turned and said "This is Mr. T'ieh Pu-tsan." Shen Tze-ping came up to greet him, and said "How are you." Mr. Shen asked him "Have you had your lunch?" and he said "I have just arrived, and came here immediately after washing, so I have not yet had lunch." Mr. Shen said "Order the kitchen to prepare a meal for the second master." Shen Tze-p'ing said "No need. I will eat later with the secretaries." But then the servant came back and said "I have told the kitchen to send a meal over for the second master and the secretaries." At the same time another servant lifted the door screen and brought in some red cards. Mr. Decadent knew that it must be the secretaries coming to see their master, so he took his leave.

After dinner Mr. Shen again asked Mr. Decadent to his room to explain to Shen Tze-p'ing in detail how to go to Peach Flower Mountain to invite Liu Jen-fu. Shen Tze-p'ing then asked "What is the shortest route?" and Mr. Decadent said "I do not know the best way to go from here. In the old days we used to go from the provincial capital along the Yellow River to P'ing Yin district, and about ten miles southwest of the district you come to the foot of the mountain. When you enter the mountain you cannot go by carriage, so you had better take a donkey with you; then in the easier places you can ride on the donkey, and in the more dangerous you can walk. In the mountain there are two main paths, and some three or four miles along the western path you come to a temple. The Taoist priest in that temple knows Liu Jen-fu, and you can ask there to find out the details. There are two such temples in the mountain, one east of the village and one west of it; but I mean the one

那如何往桃花山訪劉仁甫的話，對着子平詳細問了一遍，子平又問：『從那裏去最近？』老殘道：『從此地去，怎樣走法，我却不知道。昔年是從省城順黃河到平陰縣，出平陰縣向西南三十里地，就到了山腳下了。進了山，就不能坐車，最好帶個小驢子，到那平坦的地方，就騎驢；稍微危險些的地方，就下來走兩步。進山去，有兩條大路；西峪裏走進有十幾里的光景，有一座關帝廟那廟裏的道士，與劉仁甫常相往來的，你到廟裏打聽，就知道詳細了。那山裏關帝廟有兩處：集東一個，集西一個。——這是集西的一個關帝廟。』申子平問得明白，遂各自回房安歇去了。

次日早起，老殘出去，雇了一輛騾車，將行李裝好，候申東造上衙門去稟辭，他就將前晚送來的那件狐裘，加了一封信，交給店家，說等申大老爺回店的時候，送上祛，此刻不必送去，恐有舛錯。店裏掌櫃的，慌忙開了櫃房裏的木頭箱子，裝了進去，然後送老殘動身上車，逕往東昌府去了。無非是風餐露宿。兩三日工夫，已到了東昌城內，找了一家乾淨車店住下。當晚安置停妥。次日早飯後，便往街上尋覓書店，尋了許久，始覓着一家小小書店，三間門面半邊

west of the village." When Shen Tze-p'ing had grasped these instructions they all went to bed.

The next morning Mr. Decadent went out to hire a donkey-cart and packed up his luggage. While Mr. Shen was paying a farewell visit to the yamen he gave the fox skin coat sent over the night before, together with a letter, to the hotel manager, telling him to give them to Mr. Shen on his return to the hotel, but not to send them before in case they should be lost. The manager hastily opened the wooden chest in his room and put in the coat, after which he saw Mr. Decadent off to his cart, setting out to Tung Ch'ang district. Then feeding on wind and resting in dew, in two or three days he reached Tung Chang, found a clean inn in which to stay, and made himself comfortable. The next day after breakfast he went out to look for a bookshop, and after some time he found a small bookshop consisting of three rooms, one side selling stationery and the other books. He went to the counter where books were sold, set down and asked "What books do you have here?" The manager said "This is a cultural centre, for this district is in charge of ten other districts, locally known as the Ten Beauties. All these districts are wealthy and cultured, and all the books they require are bought from us. Our shop is here, and we have a warehouse at the back, while we also have our own printing press. We do a good deal of printing here, so that we do not have to buy books from outside. May I ask your honoured name, and the object of your visit?" Mr. Decadent said "My name is T'ieh, and I have come to look for a friend." The manager asked "what name is it?" Mr. Decadent said "He is Mr. Liu Hsiao-huei. Formerly his father was the governor of our district, and I heard that

賣紙張筆墨，半邊賣書。遂走到賣書這邊櫃臺外坐下，問問此地行銷是些什麼書籍。那掌櫃的道：『我們這東昌府文風最著名的，所管十縣地方，俗名叫做「十美圖」，無一縣不是家家富足，戶戶絃歌，所有這十縣用的書，都是向小號來販。小號店在這裏，後邊還有棧房，還有作坊，許多書都是本店裏自雕板，不用到外路去販買的。你老貴姓？來此有何貴幹？』老殘道：『我姓鐵，來此訪個朋友的。』

掌櫃的道：『你老來訪朋友，是那一家呢？』老殘道：『是個柳小惠家，當年他老太爺做過我們的漕臺，聽說他家收藏的書極多，他刻了一部書名叫「納書楹」都是宋元板書，我想開一開眼界，不知道有法可以看得見麼？』

掌櫃的道：『柳家是俺們這兒第一個大人家，怎麼不知道呢。只是這柳小惠柳大人，早已去世，他們少爺叫柳鳳儀，是個兩榜，現做戶部的主事。聽說他家書多的很。都是用大板箱裝着，只怕有好幾百箱子呢。堆在個大樓上，永遠沒有人去問他。有近房柳三爺，是個秀才，常到我們這裏來坐坐，我問過他：「你

he had a good collection of books, for he printed a catalogue of his books including many Sung and Yuan dynasty editions. I want to have a look, but I don't know whether it is possible or not." "Of course I know the Liu family" said the manager, "It is the most important family here. Only Mr. Liu Hsiao-huei has already died. His son, Liu Feng-yi, is a provincial scholar and at the moment he is a secretary in the Ministry of Finance. I heard that he has many books, but they are all stored away in big wooden boxes, probably to the number of several hundred boxes. They are all piled upstairs and no one ever asks about them. One of their relatives, a certain Mr. Liu, is a district scholar, and often comes round here; so I asked him once "What precious books are those in your family? Can you tell me something about them?" He said "I have not seen them myself." I said "Are you not afraid they may be destroyed by worms?"

Just as the manager was speaking, A man walked into the shop, pulled Mr. Decadent by the sleeve, and said "Go back quickly. A bailiff has come from Tsaochow district, who wants to see you. You had better go quickly." When Mr. Decadent heard it, he said "Tell him to wait. I will be back in a moment." The other said "I have been looking for you for a long time, and our manager is very anxious. You had better go back quickly." Mr. Decadent said "Never mind. Since you have found me it will be all right. You can go now. After the man from the inn had gone out, the manager who had watched him for some distance, said hurriedly to Mr. Decadent in a low voice, "Have you valuable goods with you? Have you trustworthy friends in this district?" Mr. Decadent said "My baggage is not worth much, and I have no trustworthy friends here. Why

們家裏那些書是些甚麼寶貝？可叫我們聽聽罷咧。」他說：「我也沒有看見過是甚麼樣子。」我說：「難道就那們收着不怕蛀蟲嗎？」……』

掌櫃的說到此處。只見外面走進一個人來，拉了拉老殘說：『趕緊回去，曹州府裏來的差人，急等着你老說話呢。快點走罷！』老殘聽了，說道：『你告訴他等着罷；我略停一刻，就回去了。』那人道：『我在街上找了好半天了，俺掌櫃的着急的了不得，你老就早點回店罷！』老殘道：『不要緊的，你既找着了，你就沒有錯兒了。你去罷！』

店小二去後，書店掌櫃的看了看他去的遠了，慌忙低聲向老殘說道：『你老店裏行李值多少錢？此地有靠得住的朋友嗎？』老殘道：『我店裏行李也不值多錢，我此地也無靠得住的朋友。你問這話是甚麼意思呢？』掌櫃的道：『曹州府現是個玉大人，這人很惹不起的，不論你有理沒理，只要他自己心裏覺得不錯，就上了站籠了。現在既是曹州府裏來的差人，恐怕不知是誰拔上你老了，我看是凶多吉少，不如趁此逃去罷！行李既不值多錢，就捨去了的好，還是性命要

do you ask?" The shopkeeper said "The Governor of Tsaochow district is very fierce. It doesn't matter whether you are guilty or not, if he wants to put you in the pillory he will. Now since a bailiff has come from that district it looks as if someone must have accused you. The outlook is black and discretion is the better part of valour. Since your baggage is not worth much, you had better leave it. It is more important to save your own life." Mr. Decadent said "Never mind. He can't consider me as a robber; of that I am certain." Saying this he nodded and went out.

Facing him as he went out came a small carriage, half filled with luggage and half with a passenger, and when Mr. Decadent saw who it was he exclaimed "Is that Mr. Ching?" Then he went forward, and the man in the carriage also jumped down and exclaimed "Is that Mr. T'ieh? What are you doing here?" Mr. Decadent told him the reason, and said "You ought to stop here. Better come for a chat in my hotel. Where are you from and where are you going?" Mr. Ching said "It is growing late, and I have already rested. I want to travel further today. I have come from the North and am going home because there is family business for which I have to go back quickly. So I cannot delay." Mr. Decadent said "In that case I must not delay you, only let me ask you to sit down for a little. I want to send a letter to Liu Jen-fu, and I will trouble you to take it along for me." Then he bought a pen and several sheets of paper and an envelope from the stationery counter in the bookshop, and borrowing their ink he hastily wrote a letter and gave it to Mr. Ching, then bowed to him and said "Excuse me for not seeing you off." When you see my friends in the mountains, give them my best regards," Mr. Ching took the letter and got into his carriage, while Mr. Decadent returned to his inn. If you want to know whether the bailiff from Tsaochow district had come to arrest Mr. Decadent or not, you must read the next chapter.

緊！』

老殘道：『不怕的，他能拿我當強盜嗎？這事我很放心。』說着，點點頭，出了店門。街上迎面來了一輛小車，半邊裝行李，半邊坐人，老殘眼快，看見喊道：『那車上不是金二哥嗎？』即忙走上前去。那車上人也就跳下車來，定了定神，說道：『嚶呀！這不是鐵二哥嗎？你怎樣到此地來？做什麼的？』老殘告訴了原委，就說：『你應該打尖了，就到我住的店裏去坐坐談談罷。你從那裏來？往那裏去？』那人道：『這是甚麼時候，我已打過尖了，今天還要趕路程呢。我是從直隸回南，因家下有點事情，急於回家，不能耽擱了。』老殘道：『既是這樣說，也不留你，只是請你略坐一坐，我要寄封信給劉大哥，託你帶去罷。』說過，就向書店櫃臺對面那賣紙張筆墨的櫃臺上，買了一枝筆，幾張紙，一個信封，借了店裏的硯臺，草草的寫了一信，交給金二。大家作了個揖，說：『恕不遠送了。山裏朋友見着，都替我問好。』那金二接了信，便上了車，老殘也就回店去了。不知那曹州府來的差人究竟是否捉拿老殘且看下回分解。

CHAPTER VIII.

IT is said that when Mr. Decadent heard from the inn-servant that a bailiff had come to look for him from Tsaochow district, he was greatly surprised, and said to himself "Can it really be that the Governor considers me as a bandit?" When he returned to the inn he saw a bailiff who came forward and bowed to him, placed a parcel on the chair beside him, and took out a letter from his pocket, which he presented with both hands, saying "With the compliments of Mr. Shen" Mr. Decadent took the letter and read it, and found that when Mr. Shen had returned to the hotel and the manager had given him the fox skin coat he was somewhat disconcerted, but then he decided the reason that Mr. Decadent would not accept it was because it was not in keeping with his manner of living, so he had chosen a sheepskin gown from a shop and sent it after him by a bailiff, and he wrote explicitly, "If you do not accept it this time, it will be too much." When Mr. Decadent read this he smiled, and said to the bailiff "Are you from Tsaochow district?" The bailiff said "I am from the Ch'eng Wu yamen, under Tsaochow." Mr. Decadent then realized that the inn-servant before had forgotten to mention the Ch'eng-Wu district. He straightway wrote a letter of thanks, gave the bailiff two taels of silver as travelling expenditure and dismissed him.

Mr. Decadent stayed there for another two days, and found that the books of the Liu family were indeed locked.

第 八 章

話說老殘聽見店小二來告，說曹州府有差人來尋，心中甚爲詫異：『難道玉賢竟拿我當強盜待嗎？……』及至步回店裏，見有一個差人，趕上前來請了一個安，手中提了一個包袱，提着放在旁邊椅子上；向懷內取出一封信來，雙手呈上，口中說道：『申大老爺請鐵老爺安。』

老殘接過信來一看，原來是申東造回寓，店家將狐裘送上，東造甚爲難過，繼思狐裘所以不肯受，必因與行色不符，因在估衣鋪內選了一身羊皮袍子馬褂，專差送來，並寫明：「如再不收，便是絕人太甚了。」老殘看罷，笑了一笑，就向那差人說：『你是府裏的差嗎？』差人回說：『是曹州府城武縣裏的壯班。』老殘遂明白方纔店小二是漏掉下三字了。當時寫了一封謝信，賞了來差二兩銀子盤費，打發去了。

老殘又住了兩天，訪知這柳家的書，確係關鎖在

away in big cases, so that not yi on were outsiders unable to see them, but even members of the Liu family could not catch a glimpse of them. This made him feel somewhat despondent, so he took his pen and wrote a poem on the wall:

This well-known scholar's family
Has a library built up from the books of four families;
But this collection in Tung Ch'ang district
Is locked up in chests to feed the bookworms.

After writing he sighed and went to bed, and here we shall leave him for the time being.

On the day that Mr. Shen went to the district office to take his leave, he saw Governor Yu who exhorted him to use severe methods in suppressing disorder, and then after he had made some polite conversation the Governor saw him out. When Mr. Shen returned to the hotel the manager very respectfully presented to him with both hands the fur coat and the letter left by Mr. Decadent. Mr. Shen read the letter and felt somewhat taken aback, so that Shen Tze-p'ing, who was beside him, asked "What has upset you, cousin?" Then Mr. Shen told him that because he had seen Mr. Decadent wearing a padded gown, he had presented him with a fur coat, and he described their subsequent argument, saying "You see, just as he was setting out he left this coat behind after all. Isn't that rather ungracious?" Shen Tze-p'ing said "Your behaviour was not altogether correct either, cousin. I think there are two reasons for his refusal: firstly, he thinks a fur coat too costly a gift for him to accept, and, secondly, it is really useless to him, for he can't wear a fur coat with a cotton jacket. If you want to show your friendship you ought to send someone to get him a sheepskin gown and jacket,

大箱子內；不但外人見不着，就是他族中人，亦不能得見。因此，頗覺悶悶不樂，提起筆來，在牆上題一絕道：

「滄葦遵王士禮居，藝芸精舍四家書。一齊歸入東昌府，深鎖娉嬛飽蠹魚！」

題罷，唏噓了幾聲，也就睡了。——暫且放下。

却說那日，東造到府署稟辭，與玉公見面，無非勉勵些治亂世用重刑的話頭，他姑且敷衍幾句，也就罷了。玉公端茶送出。東造回到店裏，掌櫃的恭恭敬敬，將袍子一件，老殘信一封，雙手奉上。東造接來看過，心中悒悒不樂。適申子平在旁邊，問道：『大哥何事不樂？』東造便將看老殘身上着的仍是棉衣，故贈以狐裘。並彼此辯論的話，述了一遍。道：『你看他臨走，到底將這袍子留下，未免太矯情了。』

子平道：『這事大哥也有點失於檢點。我看他不肯有兩層意思：一則嫌這裘價值略重，未便遽受。二則他受了也實無用處。——斷無穿狐皮袍子，配上棉馬褂的道理。大哥既想略盡情誼，宜叫人去覓一套羊皮袍子馬褂，或布面子，或繭紬面子均可。差人送去，他一定肯收。我看此人並非矯飾作偽的人，不知大哥以

either of cloth or raw silk; then if you send them to him by a bailiff, he will certainly accept them. I don't think he is proud or unnatural. What is your opinion?" Mr. Shen said "Quite right, quite right. You tell a man to go and do as you suggested."

Shen Tze-p'ing then saw that this was done, and despatched a bailiff to take the coat to Mr. Decadent. Then, when his cousin had left for his new post, he hired a carriage from the district and, taking little luggage and few attendants, he set out for P'in Yin district. When he reached the district he hired two small carts for his baggage and a horse for himself to ride, and thus in one morning he reached the foot of the mountain. Here the horse could go no further, but fortunately there was a village at the mouth of the valley, with a small inn where people could sleep on the ground. Here he had to stop, hiring a small donkey from the villagers and sending the horse back; and after eating his lunch he set out for the mountain. As soon as he was out of the village he saw before him a sandy river more than a third of a mile wide, but most of the river bed was filled with sand and there was only a trickle of water in the middle, over which the local people had built a wooden bridge a few tens of feet long. Although the river under the bridge was frozen over, one could hear the sound of water trickling through beneath the ice, sounding like the tinkling of jade pendants, and he knew that this was caused by the water carrying tiny fragments of ice to beat against the larger pieces of ice. Beyond this sandy river lay the Eastern Valley.

The mountain here stretched from the south northwards, and in the middle were ranges of varying height.

爲何如？」東造道：『很是，很是。你就叫人照樣辦去。』

子平一面辦妥，差了個人送去；一面看着乃兄動身赴任，他就向縣裏要了車，輕車簡從的向平陰進發。到了平陰，換了兩部小車，推着行李，在縣裏要了一匹馬騎着，不過一早晨，已經到了桃花山脚下。再要進去，恐怕馬也不便，幸喜山口有個村莊，——只有打地鋪的小店——沒法，暫且歇下。向村戶人家雇了一條小驢，將馬也打發回去了，打過尖，吃過飯，向山裏進發。纔出村莊，見面前有一條沙河，有一里多寬，却都是沙，惟有中間一線河身，土人架了一個板橋；不過數丈長的光景。橋下河裏雖結滿了冰，還有水聲從那冰下潺潺的流，聽着像似環佩搖曳的意思，知道是水流帶着小冰，與那大冰相撞擊的聲音了。過了沙河，即是東峪。

原來這山從南面迤邐北來，中間龍脈起伏，一時雖看不到，只是這左右兩條大路，就是兩批長嶺，岡巒重沓，到此相交；除中峯不計外，左邊一條大谿河，叫東峪，右邊一條大谿河，叫西峪，兩峪裏的水，在前面相會，並成一谿，左環右轉，灣了三灣，纔出谿口；

He could not see the whole mountain, but there were two ranges on the right and the left formed by two long undulating ridges which met at this point; so that in the middle was the summit of the mountain, on the left a big valley called the Eastern Valley, and on the right another big valley called the Western Valley. The streams in these two valleys joined together below to form one stream, and after three turnings one came to the mouth of a river, which was the sandy river he had just passed.

When Shen Tze-p'ing entered the mountain and looked up he saw that at no great distance there were some high ranges in front, looking like a screen rising before him, where earth and rocks intermingled, interspersed with trees. It was just after heavy snow and the rocks were blue, the snow white, the leaves on the trees yellow, while there were green pine trees scattered here and there like the moss you may see in paintings. Riding his donkey and enjoying the mountain scenery, he was exceedingly happy, and he thought of composing a few lines of poetry to describe the scene. He was just lost in thought when there was a sudden crash, and he felt his legs slip, while he rolled over sidewise down into the gully. Fortunately, the path lay alongside the gully, so that although he rolled down had not far to go. Moreover the snow on the two sides of the gully was very deep, and on the surface there was a thin layer of ice. As Shen Tze-p'ing rolled down, this thin layer of ice broke under his weight, and he felt as if he were spinning down from a whirling mattress. After he had rolled some distance a big rock stopped him, so that he was not injured at all. He quickly supported himself on the rock and stood up, his two feet making two big imprints in the snow more

出口後，就是剛纔所過的那條沙河了。

子平進了山口，抬頭看時，只見不遠，前面就是一片高山，像架屏風似的，迎面豎起。土石相間，樹木叢雜。却當大雪之後，石是青的，雪是白的，樹上枝葉是黃的，又有許多松柏是綠的，一叢一叢，和畫上點的苔一樣。騎着驢，玩着山景，實在快樂得極，思想做兩句詩，描摹這個景象。正在凝神，只聽壳鐸一聲，覺得腿脛裏一顛，身子一搖，竟滾下山澗去了。幸喜這條路本在澗旁走的，雖滾下去。尚不甚深；況且澗裏兩邊的雪，本來甚厚。只爲面上結了一層薄冰，做了個雪的包皮。

子平一路滾着，那薄冰一路破着，好像從有彈簧的褥子上滾下來似的，滾了幾步，就有一塊大石將他攔住。所以一點沒有碰傷。連忙扶着石頭，立起身來。那知把雪倒截了兩個一尺多深的窟窿，看那驢子，在上面兩隻前蹄已經立起，兩隻後蹄還陷在路旁雪裏，不得動彈。連忙喊跟隨的人；前後一看，並那推行李的車子，影響俱無，你道是甚麼緣故呢？原來這山路，行走的人，本來不多，故那路上積的雪。比旁邊稍爲淺些，究竟還有五六寸深。驢子走來，一步步的不甚

than two feet deep. Then he looked at the donkey above him, and saw that its front legs were already freed, but its two hind legs were still embedded in the snow unable to move. Thereupon he shouted for his attendants, but when he looked round there was no sign of them nor of the carts carrying his baggage. The reason for this was that there were very few people walking along this mountain path, so that although the snow was less here than elsewhere, it was still five or six inches deep. Thus the donkey was able to advance slowly without undue difficulty, the rider wrapt in contemplation of the scenery, forgetful of the carts behind; but the carts had to be pushed up and met more resistance from the snow, so that although there was one man pushing and one pulling, each cart advanced very slowly, and they were now several hundred yards behind.

Shen Tze-p'ing was caught in the snow and could not move, so he had to be patient and wait for the small carts to arrive. In about the time of half a meal the carts came up, and all the men rested and tried to think of a way out. People at the bottom of the gully could not get up, and those who were up could not go down so. After much thought they decided the best way was to untie two ropes from the baggage and join them together, letting one end down for Shen Tze-p'ing to tie around his waist, while four or five men above together tugged the rope, and so at last they dragged him up. His attendants wiped away the snow on him, then brought over the donkey and he rode slowly forward.

Although the path was not tortuous it had sudden ups and downs, and the rocky path was very slippery by reason of the frozen snow. Thus although they started at one

吃力。子平又貪看山上雪景，未曾照顧後面的車子。可知那小車輪子，是要壓倒地上往前推的，所以積雪的阻力顯得很大。一人推着，一人挽着，尚走得不快，本來去驢子已落後有半里多路了。

申子平陷在雪中，不能舉步，只好忍着性子，等小車子到。約有半頓飯工夫，車子到了。大家歇下，來想法子。下頭人固上不去，上頭的人也下不來；想了大半天，只好把捆行李的繩子，解下兩根，接續起來，將一頭放了下去；申子平自己將繩繫在腰裏，那一頭上邊四五個人齊力收繩，方纔把他吊了上來。跟隨人替他把身上雪撲了又撲，然後把驢子牽來，重復騎上，慢慢的行。

這路雖非羊腸小道，忽而上高，忽而下低，石頭路徑，冰雪一凍，異常的滑，自飯後一點鐘起身，走到四點鐘，還沒有十里地，心裏想道：『聽村莊上人說：到山集不過十五里地，然走了三點鐘頭，纔走了一半。』冬天日頭本容易落，況又是個山裏，兩邊都有嶺子遮着，愈黑得快。一面走着，一面的算，不知不覺，那天已黑下來了。

o'clock and travelled till four o'clock, they did not cover more than three miles, and he thought "I heard the villagers say it was about five miles to the village, but in three hours we have only covered half the distance." In winter the sun sets early, the more so in the mountain where there are ranges on both sides, causing the day to become dark even sooner. So he rode and reckoned as he went, and the day had already grown dark.

Shen Tze-p'ing stopped his donkey and took counsel with the cartmen: "The day is evidently growing dark. We have more than two miles to go, and the road is difficult, so that the carts cannot travel fast. What shall we do?" The cartmen said "There is nothing we can do. Fortunately today is the thirteenth, and the moon will be up early. At all costs we have to get to the village. Probably along such a lonely mountain path there will not be any bandits; so even if we are late, it does not matter." Shen Tze-p'ing said "Apart from the fact that there probably are no bandits, even if there are, I have not much baggage, and I do not mind even if they take it all; what I am really afraid of is that there may be wild beasts. The day has grown dark and if they should come out to devour us, that would be a fearful thing." The cartmen said "There are not too many tigers in this mountain, and they are under the control of a holy tiger, so that they never harm people. There are more wolves, but if we hear them coming we can all take a stick in our hands, and then we need not fear them."

As they were speaking they came to a gully formed by a small waterfall whose water flowed into the valley. Although the waterfall was dried up in winter, this gully, more than twenty feet deep and about twenty feet wide,

子平勒住驢韁，同推車子商議道：『看看天已黑下來了，大約還有六七里地呢；路又難走，車子又走不快怎麼好呢？』車夫道：『那也沒有法子，好在今兒是個十三日，月亮出得早，不管怎麼，總要趕到集上去。大約這荒僻山徑，不會有強盜，雖走晚些，倒也不怕他。』子平道：『慢說強盜沒有，倘或有了，我也無多行李，很不怕他，拿就拿去，也不要緊。實在可怕的是豺狼虎豹，天晚了，倘若出來了吃我們就壞了。』車夫道：『這山裏虎倒不多，有仙虎管着，從不傷人，只是狼多些，聽見他來，我們都拿根棍子在手裏，也就不怕他了。』

說着，走到一條橫澗跟前。原是本山的一支小瀑布，流歸澗河的；瀑布冬天雖然乾了，那沖的一條山溝，尚有兩丈多深，約有二丈多寬，當面隔住。一邊是陡山，一邊是深谷，更無別處好繞。子平看見如此景象，心裏不禁作起慌來，立刻勒住驢頭，等那車子走到，道：『可了不得！我們走差了路，走到死路上了。』那車夫把車子歇下，喘了兩口氣，說：『不要慌，不要慌。這條路影一順來的，並無第二條路，不會差的。等

stretched across their path. On one side towered the sheer mountain, and on the other yawned the deep precipice, so they had no other way. When Shen Tze-p'ing saw this his heart failed him, and he stopped his donkey to wait for the carts to come up. Then he said "This is terrible. We have taken a wrong path, and now we have reached a dead end." The carters set down their carts to take breath, and one of them said "Never mind, never mind. When we walked this way we didn't see any other path, so it can't be wrong. Let me have a look to see how we can cross this gully." He went forward for a few yards and came back, saying "There is a way, only it is rather difficult. You had better dismount." Shen Tze-p'ing dismounted and led his donkey after them to where they could see that on one side of the big rock someone had built a stone bridge. It consisted of two slabs of stone, each only about a foot wide, and these stones were not closely joined, but there was an empty space of several inches in the middle, and the whole was covered with a layer of slippery ice. "This is terrifying" said Shen Tze-p'ing. "One false step will mean death. I really have not the courage to attempt it." The carters looked and said "Never mind. We have a way. It is a good thing we are wearing straw shoes and will not slip. There is no need to be frightened." One of them said "Let me try it first" then he went over in leaps, crying out "It's easy, it's easy." He came back at once and said "We couldn't push the carts over. Let four of us carry one cart, and take them over in two crossings."

"Even if you can carry the carts across" said Shen Tze-p'ing "I cannot possibly cross. And what can be done with the donkey?" The carters said "Don't be alarmed,

我前去看看，該怎麼走。」朝前走了幾十步，回來說：『路倒是有，只是不好走。你老下了驢罷。』

子平下來牽了驢，依着走到前面看時，原來轉過大石，靠裏有人架了一條石橋。只是此橋僅有兩條石柱，每條不過一尺一二寸寬，兩柱又不緊相黏靠，當中還罅着幾寸寬一個空當兒，石上又有一層冰滑溜滑溜的。子平道：『可嚇煞我了！這橋怎麼過法？一滑腳就是死，我真沒有這個膽子走。』車夫大家看了說：『不要緊，我有法子，好在我們穿的都是蒲草毛窩，脚下很把滑的，不怕他。』一個人道：『等我先走一趟試試。』遂跳竄跳竄的走過去了，嘴裏還喊着：『好走！好走！』立刻又走回來說：『車子却沒法推，我們四個人抬一輛，作兩遭擡過去罷。』申子平道：『車子抬得過去，我却走不過去，那驢子又怎樣呢？』車夫道：『不怕的。且等我們先把你老扶過去，別的你就不用管了。』子平道：『就是有人扶着我，也是不敢走，告訴你說罷，我兩條腿已經僵了那裏還能走路呢。』車夫說：『那們也有辦法。你老索性睡下來，我們兩個人抬頭，兩個人抬脚，把你老抬過去如何？』子平

We will first help you over, and you can leave the rest to us." Shen Tze-p'ing said "Even if you help me, I still would not dare to go. To tell the truth, both my legs have become limp, making it impossible for me to walk?" One man said "There is another way. You had better lie down, and two of us will take your head and two of us your feet, and so we will carry you over." "Impossible, utterly impossible" said Shen Tze-p'ing. Another said "I have a better plan. We will untie a rope and fasten it round your waist. One of us will go in front, holding the rope, and one of us behind. In that way you will feel safer, and your legs will stop being limp." "I suppose I shall have to do that" said Shen Tze-p'ing. So they took him over in that fashion, after which they carried the two carts over. Only the donkey would not budge, and after they had tried everything, they finally blind-folded it, and with one man tugging it and another man beating it, they contrived to get it across. By the time this business was concluded, the shadows of trees were thrown all over the ground, and the moon was already very bright.

Having at last with great difficulty crossed the dangerous bridge, they had a rest and a pipe of tobacco before going on. After some ten yards they heard two deep roars at a distance, and the cart men exclaimed "Tiger: Tiger:" So as they walked they strained their ears to listen, and after a few more yards the chief carter stopped the carts and said "Sir, you had better not ride on the donkey. Better get off. Judging by the roar, the tiger is coming from the west and getting nearer. Probably he will cross this path, so we had better get out of the way; for if we wait till he comes, it will be too late." As he was speaking Shen Tze-

說：『不妥，不妥。』又一個車夫說：『還是這樣罷：解根繩子，你老拴在腰裏，我們夥計一個在前頭，挽着一個繩頭，一個夥計在後頭，挽着一個繩頭，這個樣走，你老胆子一壯，腿就不軟了。』子平說：『只好如此。』於是先把子平照樣扶掖過去，隨後又把兩輛車子抬了過去。倒是一個驢死不肯走，費了許多事，仍是把他眼睛蒙上，一個人牽，一個人打，纔混了過去。等到忙定妥了，那滿地已經都是樹影子，月光已經很亮的了。

大家好容易將危橋走過，歇了一歇，吃了袋煙，再望前進，走了不過三四十步，聽得遠遠嗚嗚的兩聲，車夫道：『虎叫！虎叫！』一頭走着，一頭留神聽着，又走了數十步，車夫將車子歇下說：『老爺！你別騎驢了，下來罷！聽那虎叫從西邊來，越叫越近了。恐怕是要到這路上來，我們避一避罷。倘到了跟前，就避不及了。』說着，子平下了驢。車夫說：『咱們捨掉這個驢子餵他罷。』

於是把驢子韁繩拴在路旁的一個小松樹上，車子就放在驢子旁邊，人却倒迴走了數十步，把子平藏在

p'ing dismounted from the donkey, and the carters said "Let us sacrifice the donkey to the tiger."

Thereupon they fastened the reins of the donkey to a small pine tree on the path, and ranged the carts alongside. The men then went back some ten yards and hid Shen Tze-p'ing in a cleft in the rocks. As for the carters, some hid themselves under the rocks and covered themselves with snow, while two of them perched themselves on some high branches on the slope; and all of them were looking towards the West. When very swiftly something leapt out under the moonlight over the Western ridge. When it reached the ridge it roared again and hurried itself down, so that it was already in the Western Valley. Then it roared once more. The men here were in a cold sweat and could not stop their teeth chattering; but their eyes were still fixed on the tiger. When the tiger reached the Western Valley it stopped, and its eyes reflected in the moonlight were very bright; but instead of looking at the donkey it looked at the men in hiding. Then it roared once more and gathered its body to leap over the near side. At that time there was no breath of air in the mountain, but now a sudden gust swept the topmost branches of the trees, and dead leaves fell rustling to the ground, while the icy air seemed to cut into their faces. But the people here were by now so terrified that they had lost consciousness.

They waited for some time, but heard no movement from the tiger, so the two cart drivers on the trees, who were bolder, climbed down and called to the others "Come out. The tiger is far away." Then the others emerged one by one from their hiding, and they pulled Shen Tze-p'ing out from the cleft in the rocks, stupetied with fright.

一處石壁縫裏。車夫有躲在大石腳下，用些雪把身子遮了的；有兩個車夫盤在山坡高樹枝上的；都把眼睛朝西面看着。說時遲，那時快，只見西邊嶺上月光之下，竄上一個物件來。到了嶺上，又是鳴的一聲，只見把身子往下一探，已經到了西澗邊了，又是鳴的一聲，這裏的人，又是冷，又是怕，止不住格格價亂抖，還用眼睛看着那虎。那虎既到西澗，却立住了腳，眼睛映着月色，灼亮灼亮，並不朝着驢子看，却對着這幾個人，又鳴的一聲，將身子一縮，對着這邊撲過來了。這時候山裏，本來無風，却聽得樹梢上呼呼地響，樹上殘葉漱漱地落，人面上冷氣梭梭地割；這幾個人，早已嚇得魂飛魄散了。

大家等了許久，却不見虎的動靜，還是那樹上的車夫胆大，下來喊衆人道：『出來罷！虎去遠了。』車夫等人，次第出來。方纔從石壁縫裏，把子平拉出，已經嚇得呆了。過了半天，方能開口說話。問道：『我們是死的，是活的哪？』車夫道：『虎過去了。』子平道：『虎怎樣過去的，一個人沒有傷麼？』那在樹上的車夫道：『我看他從澗西沿過來的時候，只是

It was a long time before he could speak, and then he asked "Are we dead or alive?" The carters said "The tiger has gone." "How did it go?" he asked. "Didn't it kill anyone?" One of the men who had been on the tree said "I saw the tiger coming over from the west side of the valley. In one leap it soared over like a bird, and the place where it crossed was seventy or eighty feet higher than our tree. After it came down with another leap it reached the eastern ridge. Then it gave a roar and went east."

When Shen Tze-p'ing heard this he felt better, and said "My two feet are still very soft and weak, and I cannot stand up." They all asked "Aren't you standing already?" When Shen Tze-p'ing looked down at his feet and realised that he was indeed already standing, he laughed and said "My body seems to be out of control." Then with people supporting him he made an effort to walk, and after some ten yards he began to regain control. He sighed and said "Although I did not lose my life to that tiger, if we come to another bridge like that we crossed just now, nothing will induce me to cross it. Besides I am hungry and cold, and I shall surely be frozen to death." As he was speaking, he reached the small tree and looked at the donkey, which was also grovelling on the ground, terrified by the tiger. The attendants dragged the donkey up and helped him on and they moved slowly forward. Suddenly, turning round another rock, they came in sight of lights ahead and many houses, and they all cried out "Good! Good! The village is in front." With this shout they all rallied so that not only did the people feel their legs much lighter, but even the donkey did not seem as slothful as before. In a very short time they reached the lights; but if you want to know whether Shen Tze-p'ing succeeded in finding Liu Jen-fu or not, you must read the next chapter.

一穿，彷彿像鳥兒似的已經到了這邊了，他落脚的地方，比我們這樹梢還高着七八丈呢。落下來之後，又是一縱，已經到了這東嶺上邊。鳴的一聲，向東去了。』

申子平聽了，方纔放下心來說：『我這兩隻腳，還是稀軟稀軟，立不起來，怎樣是好？』衆人道：『你老不是立在這裏的嗎？』子平低頭一看，方知道自己並不是坐着，也笑了。說道：『我這身子真不聽我調度了。』於是衆人搵着，勉強移步，走了約數十步，方纔活動，可以自主。嘆了一口氣道：『命雖不送在虎口裏，這夜裏若再遇見剛纔那樣的橋，斷不能過。肚裏又飢，身上又冷，活凍也凍死了。』說着，走到小樹旁邊看那驢子，也是伏在地下，知是被那虎叫嚇的如此。跟人把驢子拉起，把子平扶上驢子，慢慢價走。轉過一個石嘴，忽見前面一片燈光，約有許多房子，大家喊道：『好了！好了！前面到了集鎮了！』只此一聲，人人精神震動，不但人行脚下覺得輕了許多，即驢子亦不似從前畏難苟安的行動。那消片刻工夫，已到燈之下。欲知申子平此去，請得動劉仁甫與否，且看分解。

CHAPTER IX.

IT is said that when Sheng Tze-p'ing reached the village he noticed that it was thickly populated, and although there were not many shops there were numerous roadside stalls on both sides of the street, selling agricultural implements and the daily necessities of country life. He asked the country people the way to the temple, and found Liu Jen-fu already there. They met and greeted each other, and he took out Mr. Decadent's letter and gave it to Mr. Liu. Mr. Liu received the letter and said "I am a rustic man, ignorant of official rules and with little talent. I fear that I could not fulfill your cousin's expectations, so it would be better for me not to go. However I received a letter from Mr. Decadent, brought by Mr. Chin, insisting that I should go; and since I was afraid that the Cypress Valley where I live would be too difficult to find, I stayed here to decline the invitation, and I hope that you will help me to decline it. It is not that I shirk responsibility or am over-proud, but I really feel that I may not be equal to the work, and may spoil a worthy project. So I hope you will excuse me."

"Please do not be over modest" said Sheng Tze-p'ing. "My cousin felt that other people could not ask you to go, so he sent me here specially to invite you." Then Liu Jen-fu realised that he could not decline, so he settled his private affairs and went to Ch'eng Wu district with Sheng Tze-p'ing, where Mr. Sheng treated him as his guest of honour. Everything was done in accordance with Mr. Decadent's

第九章

話說申子平來到集上，只見那集上人烟稠密，店面雖不多，兩邊擺地攤售賣農家器具，及鄉下日用物件的，不一而足。問了鄉人，纔尋着了關帝廟，果然劉仁甫已到，相見敘過寒溫，便將老殘書信取出，遞與仁甫。

仁甫接了，說道：『在下粗人，不懂衙門裏規矩，才具又短，恐怕有累令兄知人之明，總是不去的爲是。因爲接着金二哥帶來鐵哥的信，說一定叫去，又恐住的地方柏樹峪難走，覓不着，所以迎候在此面辭。一切總請二先生代爲力辭方好。不是躲懶，也不是拏喬，實在恐不勝任，有誤尊事，務求原諒！』

子平說：『不必過謙，家兄恐別人請不動先生，所以叫小弟專誠敦請的』。劉仁甫見辭不掉，只好安排了自己私事，同申子平回到城武，申東造果然待之以上賓之禮，其除一切均照老殘所囑咐的辦理，初起也還

instructions, and, while in the beginning there were one or two cases of robbery, after a month they achieved such a state of security that dogs no longer barked at night. But of this no more.

It is said that when Mr. Decadent left Tung Chang district he intended to return to the provincial capital. One day he reached Ch'i Ho district and looked for a hotel at the South Gate, only to find that all the hotels on the street were full. He felt surprised and said to himself "I have never known this place so busy before. What is the reason for this?" He was just wondering, when a man entered the hotel, shouting "Good, good. It is nearly all through. Probably tomorrow morning we can cross over." Mr. Decadent had no time to question him, but he found the hotel manager and asked him "Do you have a room?" The hotel manager said "We are full. Please try another hotel." Mr. Decadent said "I have been to two hotels already, and they were both full. Try to squeeze me into a room; it doesn't matter whether it is good or bad." "The manager said" This place is really full up. But in the next hotel on the east side some guests left at noon, and if you go there quickly you may find there is still a room." Mr. Decadent accordingly went to the other hotel and asked the manager, and there were indeed two rooms empty; so he moved his baggage in. The attendant came running to pour him water to wash his face, and put a lighted incense stick on the table, saying "Please smoke." Then Mr. Decadent asked "Why is the place in such a hub-bub, so that all the hotels are full?"

The attendant said "The North wind has been blowing for several days, and for the last three days there has been ice floating in the river, some blocks as big as a whole house;

有一兩起盜案，一月之後，竟到了犬不夜吠的境界了。這且不表。

却說老殘由東昌府動身，打算回省城去，一日走到齊河縣城南門覓店，看那街上，家家客店，都是滿的。心裏詫異道：『從來此地沒有這們熱鬧，這是甚麼緣故呢？』正在躊躇，只見門外進來一人，口中喊道：『好了，好了。快打通了。大約明日一早晨就可以過去了。』老殘也無暇訪問，且找了店家問道：『有屋子沒有？』店家說：『都住滿了，請到別家去罷。』老殘說：『我已走了兩家，都沒有屋子，你可以對付一間罷，不管好歹。』店家道：『此地實在沒法了，東隔壁店裏，午後走了一幫客，你老趕緊去。或者還沒有住滿呢。』老殘隨即到東邊店裏問了店家，居然還有兩間屋子空着，當即搬了行李進去，店小二跑來打了洗臉水，拏了一枝燃着了的綫香放在桌上。說道：『客人抽烟。』老殘便問：『這兒爲甚麼這們熱鬧，各家客店都住滿了？』店小二道：『刮了幾天的大北風，打大前兒，河裏就淌凌凌塊子，有間把屋子大，擺渡船不敢走，恐怕碰上凌，船就要壞了，到了昨日，上灣子凌插住了，這

so that boats dare not pass, fearing to be wrecked by the iceburgs. Already yesterday the upper river was all blocked up with ice. Below this bay boats could pass, but then they would be frozen up by the ice on both sides of the river. Yesterday His Excellency Mr. Li of Tung Ch'ang district came here on his way to see the Provincial Governor. But having reached here he could not cross the river, and became very anxious; so he stayed in the yamen and sent the local headmen and boatmen to break the ice. They have been breaking it all day, and it seems they are breaking through; only they can't stop tonight, for once they leave off it will freeze up again. So you see all the hotels are filled with people who cannot cross the river. Our hotel was still full this morning, but we had a group of guests among whom was an old man, who looked at the river for a long time from the bank, and said "They will never break through this ice; there is no point waiting here. Let's go to Lo K'ou to see whether there is any other way or not. We can come to a decision there." They only left at noon. Luckily for you; for otherside you would not have got a room.' After saying this he left.

Mr. Decadent washed his face, made his bed, locked his room and went out to the river side to have a look. He saw the Yellow River rushing down from the southwest to form a bay here, before flowing due east. The river here was not very wide, the distance between the banks being little more than half a mile, while the river itself was only some three hundred yards across; but the ice was piling up seven or eight inches high above the water. Then he walked some two hundred steps upstream, and saw the floating ice from upstream still floating down piece by piece. When it

灣子底下，可以走船呢，却又被河邊上的凌，把幾隻渡船都凍的死死的。昨兒晚上，東昌府李大人到了，要見撫臺回話，走到此地過不去，急的甚麼似的，住在縣衙門裏，派了河夫地保打凍；今兒打了一天，看看可以過了，只是夜裏不要歇手，歇了手，還是凍上。你老看，客店裏都滿着，全是過不去河的人，我們店裏今早晨還是滿滿的，因為有一幫客，內中有一個年老的，在河沿上看了半天，說：「凍是打不開的了，不必在這裏死等，我們趕到維口看有法子想沒有，到那裏再打主意罷。」午牌時候纔開車去的，你老真好造化。不然，直沒有屋子住。」店小二將話說完，也就去了。

老殘洗完了臉，把行李鋪好，把屋門鎖上，也出來步到河隄上看。只見那黃河從西南上下來，到此却正是個灣子，過此便向正東去了。河面不甚寬，兩岸相距不到二里，若以此刻河水而論，也不過百把丈的光景；只是前面的冰，插的重重疊疊的，高出水面有七八寸厚。再望上游走了一二百步，只見那上游的冰，還一塊一塊的慢慢價來，到此地被前頭的攔住，走不動，就站住了。那後來的冰趕上他，只擠得嚙嚙價響。

reached the bay here its passage was blocked by the ice in front, and, being unable to move forward, it stuck fast. Then the ice behind pressed forward, crushing against it with a grating sound, and this ice was impelled by the current to thrust its way by degrees to the top of the ice in front so that the ice in front was gradually pressed down. Although the river was about three hundred yards across, the rapid current in the middle was only some hundred yards wide, and the water on the two sides was already frozen over, presenting a flat surface; thus, covered by the wind-blown dust, it looked like a sandy beach. But the rapid current in the middle was still rushing forward with a great uproar, forcing the ice which could not get past to leap sidewise. The ice on the smooth water, crushed by the ice hurtling from mid-stream, fled precipitately to the shore, where it was thrown up for a matter of two yards and many pieces of broken ice were forced erect under the pressure, standing upright like so many small screens. He watched this for about an hour, until the ice was locked so fast that it could not move.

Mr. Decadent then walked further down river, passing the place where he had stopped before, and continuing further. He saw two boats with about a dozen men on board, all of whom were breaking the ice with great wooden pestles, pounding the ice before and then behind, while by the other bank there were two other boats similarly engaged. The day was growing dark and he decided to go back to his hotel, and then he noticed that the willow trees on the bank were already casting shadows on the ground and trembling in the wind, for by this time the moon had risen. He returned to the hotel, opened his door, called the

後冰被這流水逼的緊了，就竄到前冰上顛去；前冰被壓，就漸漸低下去了，看那河身，不過百十丈寬，當中大溜，約莫不過二三十丈。兩邊俱是平水，這平水之上，早已有冰結滿，冰面却是平的，被吹來的塵土蓋住，却像沙灘一般。中間的一道大溜，却仍然奔騰澎湃，有聲有勢，將那走不過去的冰，擠的兩邊亂竄。那兩邊平水上的冰，被當中亂冰擠破了，往岸上跑，那冰能擠到岸上五六尺遠；許多碎冰被擠的站起來，像個小插屏似的。看了有點把鐘工夫，這一截子的冰，又擠死不動了。

老殘復行往下游走去，過了原來的地方是往下走，只見有兩隻船，船上有十來個人，都拿着木杵打冰，望前打些時，又望後打。河的對岸，也有兩隻船，也是這們打。看看天色漸漸昏了，打算回店，再看那隄上柳樹，一棵一棵的影子，都已照在地下，一絲一絲的搖動，原來月光已經放出光亮來了。回到店裏，開了門，喊店小二來，點上了燈，過吃晚飯，又到隄上開步。

這時北風已息，誰知道冷氣逼人，比那有風的時

attendant to light his lamp, had his dinner and went out for another stroll on the bank.

By this time the wind had already dropped, but the freezing air was even more stinging than the wind; however Mr. Decadent had fortunately already put on the sheepskin coat given him by Mr. Sheng so that he could stand this bitter cold. He saw that the boats were still breaking the ice; on each boat there was a small lantern and from a distance he seemed to see written on one side 'The Yamen' and on the other 'Ch'i Ho district,' but he did not give them another thought. Then he raised his head and looked at the mountain in the south, glistening white and appearing more magnificent in the moonlight, although the ridges were not clearly discernible. There were also some white clouds gathering there which ^{III} seemed to merge into the moonlight, so that only by gazing fixedly at them could one make out which were clouds and which mountains. For although the clouds and the mountains were both white and glistening, since the moon was behind the clouds the brightness of the clouds was radiated from within, but this was not so with the mountains; for the brightness of the mountains was caused by the moonlight reflected by the snow, so that the effect was different. However this was only the case regarding the immediate vicinity, and as the mountains stretched further and further away towards the east, one could only see that the sky was white, the mountains white and the clouds white, without being able to differentiate between them.

Gazing at this scene of intermingled snow and moonlight, Mr. Decadent remembered the poem of Hsieh Ling-yun:

The bright moon shines on the gathering snow,

候，還利害些。幸得老殘早已換上申東造所贈的羊皮袍子，故當此苦寒，還支撐得住。只見那打冰船還在那裏打，每個船上點了一個小燈籠，遠遠看去，彷彿一面是「正堂」二字，一面是「齊河縣」三字，也就由他去了。擡起頭來看那南面的山，一條雪白，映着月光分外好看，一層一層的山嶺，却不大分辨得出；又有幾片白雲，夾在裏面，所以看不出是雲是山。及至定神看去，方纔看出那是雲，那是山來。雖然雲也是白的，山也是白的，雲也有亮光，山也有亮光，只因爲月在雲上，雲在月下，所以雲的亮光，是從背面透過來的；那山却不然，山上的亮光，是由月光照到山上，被那山上的雪反射過來，所以光是兩樣子的。然只就稍近的地方如此；那山往東去，越望越遠，漸漸的天也是白的，山也是白的，雲也是白的，就分辨不出甚麼來了。

老殘對着雪月交輝的景子，想起謝靈運的詩。

「明月照積雪，北風勁且哀」兩句，若非經歷北方苦寒景象，那裏知道「北風勁且哀」的個「哀」字下的好處呢？這時月光照的滿地灼亮，抬起頭來，天上的星，

The North wind is keen and sad.

Only one who has experienced the bitter cold of North China can appreciate the appropriateness of the word 'sad' in the last line. Now the moonlight flooded the ground with brightness, and when he looked up he could see no stars in the sky but the Dipper in the north showing like seven faint specks of White. The Dipper was on the west side of the Wall, with its bowl above and its handle below, and he thought "Days have gone past like water flowing. In the twinkling of an eye the Dipper will be pointing east once more and another year will have passed. What will be the end, when year after year passes unprofitably like this?" Again he called to mind the lines in the Book of Songs:

There is a Dipper in the North,

But you cannot use it to pour wine.

"Now" he thought "The country is in peril, yet the nobles and high officials are only afraid of being punished, and their policy is to let sleeping dogs lie, with the result that everything has come to a standstill, and what can be the outcome? With the country in such a state, how can one think of one's family?" Thinking thus he unconsciously shed tears, and having no heart to enjoy the scenery walked slowly back to his hotel. As Mr. Decadent was walking, however, he had the impression that there was something on his face, and when he put up his hand to feel it he found two thin pieces of ice. At first he could not understand this, but when he realised he laughed, for these were the tears he had shed, which had frozen immediately in the bitter cold, and there must also be some beads of ice on the ground. So he returned gloomily to the hotel and slept.

The next morning he went to the bank to have another

一個也看不見；只有北邊北斗七星，開陽搖光，像幾個淡白點子一樣，還看得清楚。那北斗正斜倚在紫微垣的西邊，上面杓在上，魁在下，心裏想道：『歲月如流，眼見斗杓又將東指了！人又要添一歲了！一年一年的這樣瞎混下去，如何是個了局呢？』又想到詩經上說的「維北有斗，不可以挹酒漿」現在國家正當多事之秋，那王公大臣只是恐怕耽處分，多一事不如少一事，弄的百事俱廢，將來又是怎樣個了局？國是如此，丈夫何以家爲。想到此地，不覺滴下淚來，也就無心觀玩景緻，慢慢走回店去。

老殘一面走着，覺得臉上有樣物件附着似的，用手一摸，原來兩邊着了兩條滴滑的冰。起初不懂甚麼緣故，既而想起，自己也就笑了，原來就是方纔流的淚，天寒，立刻就凍住了，地下必定還有幾多冰珠子呢。悶悶的回到店裏，也就睡了。

次日早起，再到隄上看看，見那兩隻打冰船，在河邊上，已經凍實在了。問了隄旁的人，知道昨兒打了半夜，往前打去，後面凍上，往後打去，前面凍上，所以今兒歇手不打了。大總等冰結牢壯了，從冰上過

took, and noticed that the two boats used to break the ice were now icebound themselves by the side of the river. He questioned the people on the bank and found out that they had tried to break the ice for half the night; but when they broke the ice in front, the river froze up behind them, and when they tried to break the ice behind, the river in front froze up. So today they had given up the attempt. They would wait until the river had frozen hard and then try to cross over the ice, and this was what Mr. Decadent would have to do also. Since he had nothing to do he went for a stroll in the town where he noticed there were only a few shops along the main streets, and a few tiled houses in the back streets, presenting a most desolate appearance. But since this was characteristic of most places in the north he did not wonder at it. Then he returned to his room, opened his case and started reading a book.

After he had read for some time he again went to the door and stood there idly for a little while. He was just going to turn back when a servant wearing a red-tasselled hat came and bowed to him, saying "When did you arrive, sir?" "I came yesterday" said Mr. Decadent; but although he answered, he could not remember whose servant this was. The man seeing Mr. Decadent look hesitant, knew that he did not recognise him, so he smiled and said "My name is Huan Sheng and my master is Huang Jen-jui." Mr. Decadent said "Oh yes, yes. My memory is poor. I often went to your house; how could I have forgotten you?" Huang Sheng said "You, sir, are a person of consequence, and therefore could not remember us." Mr. Decadent laughed and said "Although I am not a person of consequence, I really quite often forget people. When did your

罷。因此老殘也就只有這個法子了。閒着無事，到城裏散步一回，只有大街上有幾家鋪面，其餘背街上，瓦屋都不甚多，是個荒涼寥落的景象。因北方大都如此，故見了也不甚詫異。回到房中。打開書篋，隨手取本書看，看了半日，復到店門口閒立；立了一會，方要回去，見一個戴紅纓帽子的家人，走近前面，打了一個千兒，說：『鐵老爺幾時來的？』老殘道：『我昨日到的。』嘴裏說着，心裏只想不起這是誰家的家人。那家人見老殘楞着，知道是認不得了，便笑說道：『家人叫黃升，敝上是黃應圖黃老爺。』老殘道：『哦，是了，是了。我的記性真壞，我常到你們公館裏去，怎麼就不認得你了呢？』黃升道：『你老貴人多忘事罷咧。』老殘笑道：『人雖不貴，忘事倒實在多的。你們貴上是幾時來的？住在甚麼地方呢？我也正悶的慌，找他談天去。』

黃升道：『敝上是總辦張大人委的，在這齊河上下，買八百萬料，現在料也買齊全了，驗收委員也驗收過了，正打算回省銷差，剛剛這河又插上了，還等得兩天纔能走呢。你老也住在這店裏嗎？在那屋裏？』

master come here, and where is he staying? I am rather lonely here, so I will look him up to chat with him." Huang Sheng said "My master was sent by Mr. Chang, the Chief Commissioner, to buy eight million pieces of timber in Ch'i Ho district. Now the timber is bought and the Censor has gone through it, and he was just thinking to return to the province to put an end to this business when the river became impassable, so that he has had to wait for a couple of days. Are you staying in this hotel too? In which room?" Mr. Decadent, pointing to the west, said "In that western chamber." Huang Sheng said "My master is staying in the northern chamber. He moved here only the night before last. During the last few days he has been working, but since the Censor left he moved here. Now he is in the district office having lunch, and after lunch His Excellency Mr. Li has asked him over for a chat. It is not certain yet whether he will be back for dinner or not." Mr. Decadent nodded and Huang Sheng left.

This Huang Jen-jui was over thirty and a native of Kiangsi. His brother was an Han Lin scholar who had become a Royal Inspector and was a good friend of the War Minister Ta La-mi: thus Huang Jen-jui had been given a position as Advisor in the Shantung River Conservancy. With a recommendation from the War Minister he was given preferential treatment by the Provincial Governor, and after another recommendation he would become a district magistrate. He was a man of some taste and while he was in the provincial capital he had been several times in Mr. Decadent's company, so they knew each other.

Mr. Decadent stood a little while longer at the door, then returned to his room, for it was now nearly evening.

老殘用手向西指道：『就在這西屋裏。』黃升道：『敝上也就住在上房北屋裏，前兒晚上纔到，前些時都在工上，因為驗收委員過去了，纔住到這兒的。此刻是在縣裏吃午飯，吃過了，李大人請着說閒話，晚飯還不定回來吃不吃呢。』老殘點點頭，黃升也就去了。

原來此人名黃應圖，號人瑞，三十多歲年紀，係江西人氏，其兄由翰林轉了御史，與軍機達拉密至好，故這黃人瑞捐了個同知來山東河工投効，有軍機的八行，撫臺是格外照應的眼，看大案保舉出奏，就是個知府大人了。人倒也不甚俗，在省城時，與老殘亦頗來往過數次，故此認得。

老殘又在店門口立了一刻，回到房中，也就差不多黃昏的時候。到房裏又看了半本詩，看不見了，點上蠟燭，只聽房門口有人進來，嘴裏喊道：『補翁！補翁！久違的很了！』老殘慌忙立起來看，正是黃人瑞；彼此作過了揖，坐下各自談了些別後的事情。

黃人瑞道：『補翁還沒有用過夜飯罷？我那裏雖然有人送了個一品鍋，幾個碟子，恐怕不中吃，倒是早起我叫廚子用口蘑燉了一隻肥雞，大約還可以下

Then he read half a book of poems in his room until he could no longer see, and had to light his candle. Just then he heard someone coming in through the door, shouting "Mr. Decadent, I have not seen you for a long time." Mr. Decadent hastily stood up and saw it was Huang Jen-jui. They greeted each other, sat down and talked of what had happened since their last meeting. "I suppose you have not yet had your dinner?" said Mr. Huang. "Although someone sent me a table-stove and some dishes, I don't think they are very good; but this morning I ordered the cook to boil a fat chicken with mushrooms, and that should do for our meal. Better come to have your dinner in my room. As the old saying goes 'It is rare to have an old friend come in a storm.' This river freezing is more tiresome than a storm; but now that I have come across an old friend like you I shall not feel lonely." Mr. Decadent said "Excellent." Since you have good things to eat, even if you hadn't asked me I should have come." Mr. Huang looked at the book on the table, took it up, noticed that it was the Anthology of Poems of the Eight Dynasties, and said "This selection is not too bad." He glanced through a few poems then put it down, and said "Let's go and sit in my room." So they prepared to go out. Mr. Decadent straightened his books took a key and locked his door, and went out with Mr. Huang to his room. He noticed there were three rooms, one bedroom and two sitting rooms. The door of the hall had a thick velvet door screen, in the middle of the room there was a big table, and on the table a piece of rubber sheeting. Mr. Huang asked "Is dinner ready?" and the servant answered "It will still be a little while. The chicken is not yet quite done." "Then bring the dishes first" said Mr. Huang, "so

飯，請你到我屋子裏去吃飯罷，古人云：「最難風雨故人來。」這凍河的無聊，比風雨更難受；好友相逢，這就不寂寞了。」老殘道：『甚好，甚好，既有嘉肴，你不請我，也是要來吃的。』人瑞看桌上放的書，順手揭起來一看，是「八代詩選」說：『這詩總還算選得好的。』也隨便看了幾首，丟下來說道：『我們那屋裏坐罷。』

於是兩個人出來，老殘把書理了一理，拿把鎖把房門鎖上，就隨着人瑞到上房裏來。看是三間屋子，一個裏間，兩個明間，堂屋門上掛了一個大呢夾板門簾，中間安放一張八仙桌子，桌子上鋪了一張漆布。人瑞問：『飯得了沒有？』家人說：『還須略等一刻。雞子還不十分爛。』人瑞道：『先拿碟子來吃酒罷。』家人應聲出去。一霎時轉來，將桌子架開，擺了四雙筷子，四隻酒杯。老殘問：『還有那位？』人瑞道：『停一會兒，你就知道了。』杯筷安置停妥，只有兩張椅子，又出去尋椅子去。人瑞道：『我們炕上坐坐罷。』

明間西首，本有一個土炕，炕上鋪滿了蘆蓆，炕

that we can drink wine." The servant assented and went out. In a little while he came back and spread the table with four pairs of chopsticks and four wine cups. "Who are the other two?" Mr. Decadent asked, and Mr. Huang said "You will know after a little while." Now the table was laid, but there only two chairs in the room, so the servant went out to fetch more chairs, and Mr. Huang said "Let us sit on the big bed."

At the west end of the hall there was a big bed on which were spread mats, and in the middle of the bed was spread a tiger-skin rug, on which they had put a tray for opium. On the two sides of the tray were two wolf skins, and in the middle was lit a bright T'ai Ku lamp. The reason that this lamp was called a T'ai Ku lamp was that in Shansi there were many rich men, all of whom smoked opium, so the opium pipes and lamps in that district were of the first quality. T'ai Ku was the name of a district in that province, and the lamps made in that district were well-shaped and bright, and might be considered the best lamps in the whole world. Unfortunately this lamp was invented in China, for if it had been invented in a foreign country, the inventor would certainly have become famous and been praised by all the newspapers, and his government would have allowed him to take out a patent. China, however, had no such rules; so although the man who invented this lamp at T'ai Ku, and the man who invented the best opium pipe at Shou Chou did excellent work which was known all over the country, their own names remained obscure. Thus although one might say they spent their skill on unworthy objects, this is also a reflection on the state of society. However, let this

的中間，人瑞鋪了一張大老虎絨毯，毯子上放了一個煙盤子。煙盤兩旁，兩條大狼皮褥子，當中點着明晃晃的太谷燈，怎樣叫做太谷燈呢？因為山西人財主最多，却又人人吸煙，所以那裏煙具比別省都精緻。太谷是個縣名，這縣裏出的燈，樣式又好，火力又足，光顧又大，五大洲數他第一呢。可惜出在中國，若是出在歐美各國，這第一個造燈的人，各報上定要替他揚名，國家就要給他專利的憑據了。無奈中國無此條例，所以叫這太谷第一個造燈的人，同那壽州第一個造斗的人，雖能使器物利用，名滿天下，而自己的聲名埋沒；雖說擇術不正，可知時會使然。閒話少說，那煙盤裏擺了幾個景泰藍的盒子，兩枝廣竹煙槍，兩邊兩個枕頭，人瑞讓老殘上首坐了，他就隨手躺下，拿了一枝煙籤子，挑煙來燒，說：『補翁，你還是不吸嗎？其實這樣東西，倘若吸得廢時失業的，自然是不好；若是不上癮，隨便消遣消遣，倒也是個妙品；你何必拒絕的這們利害呢？』老殘道：『我吸煙的朋友很多，為求他上癮吸的，一個也沒有，都是消遣消遣，就消遣進

suffice.

In the tray there were several enamel boxes, two bamboo opium pipes and two pillows, one on each side. Mr. Huang asked Mr. Decadent to sit down, and lay down himself, taking up a pin to pierce a piece of opium, which he baked over the fire, saying "Do you still abstain from smoking? Of course it is not good if a man smokes so much that he wastes his time, but if one does not become an addict, just using it as a relaxation, it is quite a pleasant pastime. Why do you refrain so scrupulously?" Mr. Decadent said "I have many friends who smoke, but not one of them started smoking in order to become an addict, all taking it as a relaxation, until they found themselves addicts. By that time not only were they unable to use it as a relaxation, but it became a never-ending burden instead. I think you would do well not to relax yourself in this way either." Mr. Huang replied "I have my limit, beyond which I shall not allow myself to be tempted."

As they were talking the screen stirred and two sing-song-girls came in. The one in front was seventeen years old, with a round face, while the one behind was a year or two younger and had an oval face. When they came in they curtsied to the men on the bed and Mr. Huang said "So you are here." Then pointing to Mr. Decadent he said "This is Mr. T'ieh, a friend of mine in the capital. Emerald Ring, you look after Mr. T'ieh and sit up there." Then the elder girl sat down on the side of the bed by Mr. Huang; but the younger one standing there was too shy to sit down, until Mr. Decadent took off his shoes and moved further in, sitting cross-legged to make room for her; then she sat down timidly on the edge of the bed.

去了；及至上癮以後，不但不足以消遣，反成了一個無窮之累，我看你老哥也還是不消遣的爲是！」人瑞道：『我自有的分寸，斷不上這個當的。』

說着，只見門簾一響，進來了兩個妓女，前頭一個有十七八歲，鴨蛋臉兒；後頭一個有十五六歲，瓜子臉兒。進得門來，朝炕上請了兩個安。人瑞道：『你們來了。』朝裏指道：『這位鐵老爺，是我省裏的朋友。翠環！你就伺候鐵老爺，坐在那邊罷。』只見那十七八歲的就挨着人瑞，在炕沿上坐下了。那十五六歲的，却立住，不好意思坐。老殘就脫了鞋子，挪到炕裏邊去，盤膝坐了，讓他好坐，他就側着身，趺起着坐下了。

老殘對人瑞道：『我聽說此地沒有這個的，現在怎樣也有了？』人瑞道：『不錯，此地還是沒有的。他們姐兒兩個，本來是平原二十里鋪做生意的。他爸媽就是這城裏的人，他媽同着他姐兒倆在二十里鋪住，前月他爸死了，他媽回來，因恐怕他跑了，所以帶回來的，在此地原不上店，這是我悶極無聊，叫他們找

Mr. Decadent said to Mr. Huang "I heard they hadn't got this here, How is it that they have it?" "You are right." said Mr. Huang. "They don't have this here. These two originally worked at Seven Mile Fair. Their proprietors belonged to this town, but their mistress stayed with them at Seven Mile Fair. However the other month their master died, so the mistress came back to the town, and, fearing that they might run away, she brought them here as well. They don't do business here; but since I felt lonely I had them fetched. This one of mine is called Emerald Flower, and that one of yours is called Emerald Ring. They both have snow-white skin, quite ravishing. Look at her hand: I am sure you will be satisfied." Mr. Decadent laughed and said "There is no need to examine her. What you say cannot be false."

Emerald Flower, leaning on Mr. Huang, said to Emerald Ring "You bake some opium for Mr. T'ieh." "Mr. T'ieh doesn't smoke" said Mr. Huang, "Let her do it for me." So he gave the pin to Emerald Ring who stooping baked the opium, filled the pipe, and passed it over. Then Mr. Huang smoked it. By the time Emerald Ring started to bake again, the servant had brought in the samovar and the dishes, and announced "Dinner is ready, sir." Mr. Huang stood up and said "Let's drink some wine. Its very cold today." So he asked Mr. Decadent to sit in the seat of honour while he sat in the place of the host, and the two girls sat at the two sides. Emerald Flower took the wine pot to pour out wine for everybody, then put down the wine pot and took up her chopsticks. First she helped Mr. Decadent to food, and he said "Please don't trouble. We are not newly married brides. We can eat ourselves." Then she gave

了來的。這個叫翠花，你那個叫翠環，都是雪白的皮膚，很可愛的，你瞧他的手呢，包管你合意。」老殘笑道：『不用瞧，你說的還會錯嗎。』

翠花倚住人瑞對翠環道：『你燒口煙給鐵老爺吸！』人瑞道：『鐵老爺不吸煙，你叫他燒給我吸罷。』就把煙籤子遞給翠環。翠環鞠拱着腰，燒了一口，上在斗上，遞過去。人瑞呼呼價吸完。翠環再燒時，那家人把碟子一品鍋均已擺好，說：『請老爺們用酒罷。』人瑞立起身來說：『喝一杯罷，今天天氣很冷，遂讓老殘上坐，自己對坐，命翠環坐在上橫頭，翠花坐下橫頭。翠花拿着酒壺，把各人的酒加了一加，放下酒壺來先舉箸布老殘的菜。老殘道：『請歇手罷，不用布了，我們不是新娘子，自己會吃的。』隨又布了黃老爺的菜，人瑞也給翠環布了一箸子菜，翠環慌忙立起身來說：『你那歇手。這實不敢當的。』又替翠花布了一箸，翠花說：『我自己來吃罷。』就用勺子接了過來，遞到嘴裏，吃了一點，就放下來了。人瑞再三讓翠環吃菜，翠環只是答應，總不動手。

some food to Mr. Huang, and Mr. Huang gave some to Emerald Ring. Who hastily stood up and said "Please don't. This is too much honour." Then he did the same for Emerald Flower, who said "I will help myself." and receiving the spoon she carried it to her lips, tasted it a little, and put it down again. Mr. Huang asked Emerald Ring several times to eat, and although she answered "Yes," she would not start.

Mr. Huang suddenly remembered something, and banging the table he exclaimed "Oh yes, oh yes." then shouted "Come!" A servant came in from behind the screen and stood some six or seven feet from the table. Mr. Huang nodded to him to approach, and whispered a few words to him, and the servant answered "Very good sir." and went away. After a little while a man wearing a blue cloth padded gown came in, holding two fiddles one of which he gave to Emerald Ring and one to Emerald Flower, and he said to Emerald Ring "The gentlemen ask you to eat. Do as the gentlemen wish." Emerald Ring appeared not to have heard clearly, and looked at the man, who said "They ask you to eat. Don't you understand?" Emerald Ring nodded and said "Yes I do." Then lifting her chopsticks she presented a piece of ham to Mr. Huang and another piece to Mr. Decadent. "Better not stand on ceremony" said Mr. Decadent, and Mr. Huang raising his cup said "Let's drink a cup, and then let them sing two songs to accompany our wine. "While he was speaking they had already tuned their fiddles, and each in turn sang a song.

Mr. Huang stirred the Table-stove with his chopsticks, but could find nothing good to eat, so he said "All the things in this samovar have special epithets: do you

人瑞忽然想起，把桌子一拍，說：『是了，是了。』遂直着嗓子喊了一聲『來啊！』只見門簾外走進一個家人來，離席六七尺立住腳，人瑞點點頭，叫他走進一步，遂向他耳邊低低說了兩句話，只見那家人連聲應道：『喳！喳！』回過頭就去了，過了一刻，門外進來一個着藍布棉襖的漢子，手裏拿了兩個三弦子，一個遞給翠花，一個遞給翠環，嘴裏向翠環說道：『叫你吃菜呢，好好的伺候老爺們。』翠環彷彿沒有聽清楚，朝那漢子看了一眼。那漢子道：『叫你吃菜，你還不明白嗎？』翠環點頭道：『知道了。』當時就拿起筷子來布了黃人瑞一塊火腿，又夾了一塊布給老殘，老殘說：『不用布最好。』人瑞舉杯道：『我們乾一杯罷。讓他們姐兒兩個唱兩曲，我們下酒。』說着，他們的三弦子已都和好了弦，一遞一段的唱了一支曲子。

人瑞用筷子在一品鍋撈了半天，看沒有一樣好吃的，便說道：『這一品鍋裏的物件，都有徽號，你知道

know them?" "No" said Mr. Decadent. Then Mr. Huang pointed with his chopsticks and said "This is 'The Wrathful Shark's Fin', this 'The Never-bending Cuttlefish', this 'The Superannuated Chicken', this 'The Debauched Duck', this 'The Unyielding Pork' and this 'The Clear Soup'." "Then they laughed. After that the two sisters sang two or three more songs and the servant announced "The home-cooked chicken." "We have had quite enough wine" said Mr. Decadent, "Let's have rice while its hot," The servant then brought in four bowls of rice. Emerald Flower stood up took over the rice bowls and presented one to each person, and they had some chicken soup with the rice, and all ate their fill.

After the meal they wiped their faces and Mr. Huang said "Let us sit on the bed again." The servant came and took away what remained of the dishes, and the four people sat on the bed. Mr. Decadent leaned on the upper bench and Mr. Huang on the lower. Emerald Flower reclined against Mr. Huang, preparing opium for him, while Emerald Ring, sitting on the edge of the bed with nothing to do, took her fiddle and toyed with the strings. Mr. Huang said "I have not seen any of your poems for a long time. Today since old friends have met in strange surroundings, you should write a poem for us to read. Mr. Decadent said "For the last two days, seeing the river frozen, I wanted to write a poem and was already considering it; but all your nonsense has sent my poem the way of the debauched duck." "If you are so 'unyielding' " said Mr. Huang, "I shall become 'wrathful'." Then they all laughed aloud.

"Very well" said Mr. Decadent, "I will write one for

不知道？」老殘說：「不知道。」他使用筷子指着說道：「這叫怒髮衝冠的魚翅，這叫百折不回的海參，這叫年高有德的雞，這叫酒色過度的鴨子，這叫恃強拒捕的肘子，這叫臣心如水的湯。」說着，彼此大笑了一回，他們姐兒兩個，又唱了兩三個曲子。家人捧上自己所燉的雞來，老殘道：「酒很够了，就趁熱盛飯來吃罷。」大家當即端進四個飯來，翠環立起，接過飯盤，送到各人面前，泡了雞湯，各自飽餐。

飯後，擦過臉，人瑞說：「我們還是炕上坐罷。」家人來撤去殘肴，四人都上炕去坐。老殘欵在上首。人瑞欵在下首，翠花倒在人瑞懷裏，替他燒煙，翠環坐在炕沿上，無事做，拿着弦子，崩兒崩兒價撥弄着頑。

人瑞道：「補兄，我多時不見你的詩了，今日總算他鄉遇故知，你也該做首詩，我們拜讀拜讀。」老殘說：「這兩天我看見凍河，很想做詩，正在那裏打主意，被你一陣胡攪，把我的詩也攪到那酒色過度的

you tomorrow." "That won't do" said Mr. Huang, "Look at the wall. There is a place newly white-washed specially prepared for your poem." Mr. Decadent shook his head and said "Keep it yourself." Mr. Huang then put his pipe down on the tray and said "Inspiration is too fleeting. I shall not let you off." So he got up and went into his room, coming back with a pen, inkstone and piece of ink, which he put on the table saying "Emerald Ring, you grind the ink." Then Emerald Ring poured out a little cold tea and started grinding the ink, and presently she said "The ink is ready. You can start writing." Mr. Huang took a duster and said "Emerald Flower, you hold the lamp, and Emerald Ring you hold the ink stone. I will dust the wall." So he gave the pen to Mr. Decadent, and Emerald Flower held the candlestick. Mr. Huang first jumped on the bed, stood under the place which was newly white-washed and dusted it, while Emerald Flower and Emerald Ring both stood on the bed too, one on each side.

Then Mr. Huang beckoned to him and said "Come, come," Mr. Decadent laughed and said "You really are a trouble-maker." So he stood on the bed, dipped the pen brush in ink from the inkstone, warmed it with his breath and started writing on the wall. Emerald Ring feared that the ink on the inkstone might freeze, and warmed it all the time with her breath. The brush was still covered with a layer of ice which became thicker and thicker until the poem was finished. It read as follows:

The earth is cleft asunder with the howling of the
North wind,

And long pieces of ice rush down, darkening the
river;

鴨子裏去了。」人瑞道：「你快別恃強拒捕，我就要怒髮衝冠了。」說罷，彼此呵呵大笑。

老殘道：「有，有，有。明天寫給你看。」人瑞道：「那不行，你瞧這牆上有斗大一塊新粉的，就是爲你題詩預備的。」老殘搖頭道：「留給你題罷。」人瑞把煙槍往盤子一放。說：「稍緩卽逝，能由得你嗎？」就立起身來，跑到房裏，拿了一枝筆，一塊硯臺，一錠墨出來，放在桌上，說：「翠環！你來磨墨！」翠環當真倒了點冷茶，磨起墨來。

霎時間，翠環道：「墨得了，你寫罷。」人瑞取了個布揮子，說道：「翠花掌燈，翠環捧硯，我來揮灰。」把枝筆遞到老殘手裏。翠花舉起蠟燭臺，人瑞先跳上炕，立到新粉的一塊底下，把灰揮了，翠花翠環也都立上炕去，站在左右，人瑞招手道：「來！來！來！」老殘笑說道：「你真會亂。」也就站上炕去，將筆在硯臺上蘸好了墨，呵了一呵，就在牆上七歪八扭的寫起來的，翠環恐怕硯上墨凍，不住的呵。那筆上還是

The ice behind pursues the ice in front,
Attacking each other and struggling in rivalry.
The river bank is swiftly ice-bound,
A silvery bridge erected over frozen rocks.
People longing to return sigh,
And travellers fret in vain.
Thus just on account of a single river
The carts cannot pass.
Let us have girls and music and a fine feast
To enliven this chilly night.

Mr. Huang read it and said "Good, good. Why not put your name to it?" Mr. Decadent said "Let's put your name." "That would never do" said Mr. Huang. "I should be accused and lose my job for feasting with singing girls, only to get the name of a poet. That would not be a good bargain." Accordingly Mr. Decadent signed his name and jumped down from the bed. The two girls put down the inkstone and the candlestick and warmed their hands at the brazier, and noticing that the charcoal was nearly burnt up, they added some new pieces. If you want to know what happened afterwards, you must read the next chapter.

裹了細冰，筆頭越寫越肥，頃刻寫完，看是：

『地裂北風號，長冰蔽河下，後冰逐前冰，相陵復相亞。河曲易爲寒，嵯峨銀橋架。歸人長咨嗟，旅客空嘆咤。盈盈一水間，軒車不能駕，錦筵招妓樂，亂此淒其夜。』

人瑞看了，說道：『好詩，好詩。爲甚麼不落款呢？』老殘道：『題個「江右黃人瑞」罷。』人瑞道：『那可要不得，冒了個會詩的名，擔了個挾妓飲酒革職的處分，有點不合算。』老殘便題了「補殘」二字，跳下炕來，翠環姐妹放下硯臺燭臺，都到火盆邊上去烘手，看炭已將燼，就取了些生炭添上。未知後事如何，且聽下回分解。

CHAPTER X.

IT is said that when Mr. Decadent got down again, he lay down in comfort on the bed, and Emerald Ring, who had become less afraid of him, reclined by his side, asking "Mr. T'ieh, where do you come from? What does this poem mean?" Mr. Decadent explained the poem to her line by line, and after a moment's reflection she said "What you said is quite right; but can you write things like that in poems?" Mr. Decadent said "If you don't write such things, then what should you write?" Emerald Ring said "When I was at Seven Mile Fair I had many visitors, some of whom wrote poems on the wall, and I liked most to ask them to explain them to me. After I had heard a great many I found there were only two main ideas: the comparatively superior people all said how great their talents were, and how nobody in the world recognised them; while the others all described how beautiful a certain girl was, and how they loved each other. Regarding those gentlemen's talents, we had no means of judging them; but how could it be that all those who came there were men of genius, so that we didn't see a single untalented person? So I made a silly remark, saying that if untalented people were so few, then, according to the proverb 'What's scarce is prized', oughtn't talented people to be highly valued? Still, that's neither here nor there.

"As for those who described the beauty of girls, the girls they mentioned were all people we knew, and some of

第 十 章

話說老殘復行坐下，隨便也就躺下來了。翠環此刻也相熟了些，就倚在老殘腿上，問道：『鐵老，你貴處是那裏？這詩上說的是什麼話？』老殘一一告訴他聽。他便凝神想了一想道：『說的真是不錯。但是詩上也與說這些話嗎？』老殘道：『詩上不與說這些話，更說甚麼話呢？』

翠環道：『我在二十里鋪的時候，過往客人，見的很多，也常有題詩在牆上的；我最喜歡請他們講給我聽。聽來聽去，大約不過兩個意思：體面些的人，總無非說自己才氣怎麼大，天下人都不認識他；次一等的人呢，就無非說那個姐兒長的怎麼好，同他怎麼樣的恩愛。那老爺們的才氣大不大呢，我們是不會知道的；只是過來過去的人，怎樣都是些大才，爲啥想一個沒有才的看看，都看着不着呢？我說一句傻話，既是沒有才的這們少，俗語說的好：「物以稀爲貴，」豈不是沒才的倒成了寶貝了嗎？這且不去管他。

『那些說姐兒們長得好的，無非都是我們眼面前的幾個人，有的連鼻子眼睛還沒有長的周全呢。他們

them hadn't even got properly shaped noses or eyes. But if they didn't compare the girl to Hsi Shih, then they compared her to Wang Ch'iang; and if they didn't say she 'caused the fish to sink to the deep and the swan to descend', they said she 'robbed the moon of its lustre and put the flowers to shame'. I don't know who Wang Ch'iang was, but I heard people say she was Lady Chao Chun. Still I could hardly believe that Lady Chao Chun and Lady Hsi Shih could both be so ugly. That certainly couldn't be true.

"As for those who said how the girl liked them and how much they loved each other, I was once foolish enough to ask one girl, and she told me "He stayed for a night and troubled me the whole night, so when it was morning I asked him for some silver. But he pulled a long face and shouted 'I paid the proper fee last night. What more do you want?'" I said to him again "Of the money you paid the hotel treasurer takes one part, the manager takes another part and our mistress takes all the rest, so that not a cent comes to us. But we have to pay for our rouge and powder and undergarments ourselves. We can't ask for anything from those gentlemen who only listen to our songs, only asking those gentlemen who stay the night for a tip for attendance." When I insisted like this, he gave me a small string of two hundred cash, throwing it on the floor, and cursing 'You bandit-prostitutes, you baggages, you dirty bitches'. Do you think that shows love? So I always thought writing poems very pointless, since it just means putting together a pack of lies. How is it that your poems aren't like that, sir?"

Mr. Decadent laughed and said "Every teacher has his own method and every trade its own trick. My teacher taught

不是比他西施，就是比他王嬙；不是說他「沈魚落雁，」就是說你「閉月羞花。」王嬙俺不知道他老是誰，有人說就是昭君娘娘，我想昭君娘娘跟那西施娘娘，難道都是這種沒樣子的嗎？一定靠不住了。

『至於說姐兒怎樣跟他好，恩情怎樣重，我有一回發了傻性了，去問了問，那個姐兒說：「他住了一夜，就麻煩了一夜，天明問他要討個兩把銀子的體己，他就抹下臉來，直着脖子梗亂嚷說：我正帳昨兒晚上就開發了還要什麼體己錢？」那姐兒就再三央告着，說：「正帳的錢呢，店裏夥計扣一分，掌櫃的又扣一分，贖下的全是領家的媽拿去，一個錢也放不出來？俺們的胭脂花粉，跟身上穿的小衣裳，都是自己錢買，光聽聽曲子的老爺們，不能問他要；只有這留住的老爺們，可以開口討兩個伺候辛苦錢。再三央告着，他給了二百錢一個小串子，望地下一摔，還要撅着嘴說：你們這些強盜婊子，真不是東西，混帳忘八蛋。」你想有恩情沒有？因此我想做詩這件事，是很沒有意思的，不過造些謠言罷了。你老的詩，怎麼不是這個樣子呢？』

老殘笑說道：『各師父，各傳授，各把戲，各變手，我們師父傳我們的時候，不是這個傳法，所以不同。』黃人瑞剛纔把一筒煙吸完，放下煙槍，說道：

me differently. That's why I don't write like that." Mr. Huang had just finished a pipe of opium, and putting it down he said "It's certainly true that 'it is impossible to judge people from their appearance, and impossible to measure the ocean in pints'. Writing poems only means putting together a pack of lies, as this child has truly said. In future I shall never write poems again, in order to avoid putting together a pack of lies, to make myself a laughing stock for them." Emerald Ring said "who would dare to laugh at you, sir? We are inexperienced country girls, and speak foolishly; so please don't blame me, sir, and I will kowtow to you." Then she turned herself to face Mr. Huang, and bowed to him several times. Huang Jen-jui said "Who's blaming you? What you said was really quite right, and no one has ever said it before. This shows how 'What is hidden from those concerned is plain to the bystanders.'"

Mr. Decadent then got up from the bed and said to Mr. Huang "Thank you very much. I want to go back to my room now to sleep." Huang Jen-jui said "Don't be in such a hurry, but wait till I have reasoned with you. Let me ask you this: can the ice on the river be broken through tomorrow or not?" Mr. Decadent said "It can't be broken through." Mr. Huang said "If the ice can't be broken through, do you dare walk over it? Will you be able to leave tomorrow?" "No" said he, "I shall not." "If you can't leave tomorrow" said Mr. Huang, "Have you any urgent business early tomorrow morning?" Mr. Decadent said "I have not."

"Exactly" said Mr. Huang. "In that case why are you in such a hurry to go back to your room? At such a gloomy

『真是人不可貌相，海水不可斗量，做詩不過是造些謠言，這句話真被這孩子說着了呢，從今以後，我也不做詩了，免得造些謠言，被他們笑話。』

翠環道：『誰敢笑話你老呢。俺們是鄉下沒見過世面的孩子，胡說亂道，你老爺可別怪着我，給你老磕個頭罷。』就側着身子朝黃人瑞把頭點了幾點。黃人瑞道：『誰怪着你呢？實在說的不錯，倒是沒有人說過的話，可見當局者迷，旁觀者清。』

老殘立在炕邊，向黃人瑞拱拱手道：『多擾！多擾！我要回屋子睡覺去了。』人瑞道：『不用忙。且等我先講個道理你聽，我且問你，河裏的冰明天能開不能開？』老殘道：『不能開。』黃人瑞道：『冰不能開，冰上你敢走嗎？明日能動身嗎？』老殘道：『不能動身。』黃人瑞道：『既不能動身，明天早起有甚麼要事沒有？』老殘道：『沒有。』

黃人瑞道：『却又來。既然如此，你慌着回屋子去幹甚麼？當此沈悶寂寥的時候，有個朋友談談，也就算苦中之樂了。況且他們姐兒兩個，雖比不上牡丹芍藥，難道還及不上牽牛花淡竹葉花嗎？剪燭斟茶，也就很有趣的。我對你說，在省城裏你忙我也忙，總想暢談總沒有個空兒，難得今天相遇，正好暢談一回。我常說，人生在世，最苦的是沒地方說話，你看一天

and lonely time as this, to have a friend to talk with should really be counted as a joy in the midst of sorrow. Moreover these two girls, although they cannot be compared to peonies, are at least better than morning-glories, aren't they? Let us trim the lamp and pour out wine, and it will be very agreeable. I tell you this, in the provincial capital we are both busy, so that although we always want to have a good talk, we never find time for it, thus it was unexpectedly fortunate to meet today when everything is just right for a good talk. I always say a man's most bitter portion is that he can't talk; yet there are people who think that a man can talk all day long, and wonder how can say that he can't talk? The fact is that people speak from two places: when they speak from the heart those are their own words, but when they speak from the throat that is just polite conversation. Now those people in the provincial capital are either my superiors or my inferiors, those who are my superiors look down on me so that I can't talk with them, and those who are my inferiors are jealous of me, so that I can't talk with them either. Still, you say, there must be people who are on an equal footing with me; but even if there are people whose positions may be more or less equal to mine, at heart we are actually different, for some think themselves vastly superior to me and look down on me, and the rest think themselves inferior and therefore envy me. That's how I find myself unable to talk. One like you must really be considered as outside the common herd. Today I was lucky enough to meet you, for whom I have always had the greatest respect, so I think you should take pity on me and talk with me; but you insist on running away. How can a man help feeling sad?"

說到晚的話，怎麼說沒地方說話呢？大凡人肚子裏發話，有兩個所在：一個是從丹田底下出來的，那是自己的話；一個是從喉嚨底下出來的，那是應酬的話。省城裏那們些人，不是比我強的。就是不如我的，比我強的他瞧不起我，所以不能同他說話；那不如我的又要妒忌我，又不能同他說話。難道沒有同我差不多的人嗎？境遇雖然差不多，心地却就大不同了：他自以爲比我強，就瞧不起我，自以爲不如我，就妒我；所以直沒有說話的地方。像你老哥，總算是圈子外的人，今日難得相逢，我又素昔佩服你的；我想你應該憐惜我，同我談談，你偏急着要走。怎麼叫人不難受呢？』

老殘道：『好，好，好。我就陪你談談。我對你說罷：我回屋子也是坐着，何必矯強呢。因爲你已叫了兩個姑娘，正好同他們說說情義話，或者打兩個皮利兒，嘻笑嘻笑，我在這裏不便；其實我也不是道學先生，想吃冷豬肉的人，作甚麼僞呢？』

人瑞道：『我也正爲他們的事情，要同你商議呢。』站起來把翠環的袖子抹上去，露出臂膊來，指給老殘看，說：『你瞧這些傷痕！教人可慘不可慘呢？』老殘看時，有一條一條青的，有一點一點紫的。人瑞又道：『這是膀子上如此，我想身上更可慘了！翠環！』

"Very well" said Mr. Decadent, "then I will keep you company. I don't mind telling you that if I went back it would only be to sit down, so why should I insist? It was just because you had already invited these two girls and everything was right for you to talk sentimentally to them or to make a few jokes and have some fun, so I thought my presence might embarrass you. But to tell the truth I'm no moralist who wants to eat cold pork and make sacrifice; so why should I be hypocritical?" "It is just on their account that I want to consult you" said Mr. Huang, and standing up, he pulled up Emerald Ring's sleeve, showing Mr. Decadent her arm, and saying "Do you see those stripes? Don't you think it's a shame?" Mr. Decadent saw there were dark stripes and livid marks, and Mr. Huang said "If the arm is like this, I imagine the body must be in an even more deplorable state. Emerald Ring, let us see your body."

By this time Emerald Ring's eyes were already filled with tears which with an effort she prevented from falling; but when he pulled her arm then many drops fell and she said "What is there to see? I'm rather shy." Mr. Huang said "Isn't this child stupid. What is there to be afraid of if we look? How can you be shy when you are in this profession?" "Why not?" asked Emerald Ring. By this time there were tears in Emeraldflower's eyes too, and she said "Don't ask her to take off her clothes." Then turning her head she looked out of the window and whispered something softly to Mr. Huang, who nodded his head and did not insist.

During this time Mr. Decadent had stretched himself on the bed and was thinking "These are both people's loving children, and when their parents looked after them who

你就把身上解開來看看。』

翠環這時兩眼已攔滿了汪汪的淚，只是忍住不叫他落下來，被他手這們一拉，却滴滴的連滴了許多淚。翠環道：『看什麼！怪臊的！』人瑞道：『你瞧這孩子傻不傻！看看怕甚麼呢？難道做了這項營生，你還害臊嗎？』翠環道：『怎不害臊？』翠花這時眼眶子裏也攔着淚，說道：『你別叫他脫了。』回頭朝窗外一看，低低向人瑞耳中，不知說了兩句甚麼話，人瑞點點頭，就不作聲了。

老殘此刻歇在炕上，心裏想着：『這都是人家好兒女，父母養他的時候，不知費了幾多的精神，歷了無窮的辛苦；淘氣碰破了塊皮，還要撫摩的，不但撫摩，心裏還要許多不受用；倘被別家孩子打了兩下，恨得甚麼似的；那種痛愛憐惜，自不待言。誰知撫養成人，或因年成饑饉，或因其父吸鴉片烟，或好賭錢，或被打官司拖累，逼到萬不得已的時候，就糊裏糊塗，將女兒賣到這門戶人家，被鴇兒殘酷，有不可以言語形容的境界。』因此，觸動自己生平所見所聞，各處鴇兒的刻毒，真如一個師父傳授，總是一樣的手段。又是憤怒，又是傷心，不覺眼睛角裏也自有點潮絲絲的起來了。

此時大家默無一言，靜悄悄的。只見外邊有人搨

knows how much loving care they spent on them, to what trouble they went or how much they suffered for them. Even when they hurt themselves through naughtiness, they would be caressed, and not only would their parents caress them but also feel grieved at heart. While if they were beaten by other children their parents indignation would be boundless. Such love and compassion cannot be expressed in words. Then, who knows, when they had brought them up, either because there was famine that year, or because the father smoked opium, or gambled or had a lawsuit, they reached such a pitch of desperation that, not knowing what they did, they sold their daughters to these houses, to be maltreated by those procuresses and suffer indescribable hardships. So he called to mind what he had seen and heard in his life of the cruelty of procuresses in various places; for they seemed to have come all from one school, where they had learned the same cruelty. Then he became so indignant that he could not help his own eyes also feeling a little moist.

At this moment when they were all silent without a word, someone outside, led by Mr. Huang's servant, carried baggage into the inner room. Then the servant came out and said to Mr. Huang "Sir, would you ask for Mr. T'ieh's key, so that we can take Emerald Ring's bedding in?" Mr. Decadent said "Naturally it will also be taken into your masters' room." Mr. Huang said "All right, all right. Don't be a moralist. Give me your key." Mr. Decadent said "No, I will not. I never do that." Mr. Huang said "I have already given the order and paid for it. Why do you insist?" Mr. Decadent said "It doesn't matter about the payment; I will return you the amount tomorrow. And since it is paid, the procuress will have nothing to say and cannot blame the

了一捲行李，由黃人瑞家人帶着，送到裏間房裏去了。那家人出來。向黃人瑞道：『請老爺要過鐵老爺的房門鑰匙來，好送翠環行李進去。』老殘道：『自然也捐到你們老爺屋裏去。』人瑞道：『得了，得了。別吃冷豬肉了，把鑰匙給我罷。』老殘道：『那可不行，我從來不幹這個的。』人瑞道：『我早分付過了，錢已經都給了，你這是何苦呢！』老殘道：『錢給了不要緊，該多少我明兒還你就得了。既已付過了錢，他老鴇子也沒有甚麼說的，也不會難爲了他，怕甚麼呢？』翠花道：『你當真的教他回去，跑不了一頓飽打，總說他是得罪了客。』老殘道：『我還有法子，今兒送他回去，告訴他明兒仍舊叫他，這也就沒事了；況且他是黃老爺叫的人，干我甚麼事呢？我情願出錢，豈不省事呢？』

黃人瑞道：『我原是爲你叫的，我昨兒已經留了翠花，難道今兒好叫翠花回去嗎？不過大家解解悶兒，我也不一定定要你如此如此。昨晚翠花在我屋裏講了一夜，坐到天明，不過我們借此解個悶，也讓他少挨兩頓打，那兒不是積功德呢？我先是因爲他們的規矩，不留下是不准動筷子的，倘若不黑就來，坐到半

girl; so what is there to be afraid of?" "If you really send her back" said Emerald Flower "she will not escape a sound beating; for it will be said that she made the visitor angry." "Then I have another way" said Mr. Decadent, "Send her back today and tell her that tomorrow we want her again. That will be all right. Besides, she was ordered by Mr. Huang, so what has it to do with me? I am willing to pay for it. Isn't that simple?" "I ordered her for you" said Mr. Huang. "I kept Emerald Flower here last night already, so how could I send her back today? We just want them to cheer us up. I don't insist on your doing anything. Last night Emerald Flower talked to me all night in my room and we sat till morning. She can cheer you up and at the same time she will escape a beating; wouldn't that be a good thing? Because they have their rule that if they are not kept for the night, they must not take a meal. Thus if they return before dark they have to sit half the night hungry, and probably will be beaten also, because their mistress will always say 'If the visitor keeps you so long, he must be fond of you. Why then does he send you back? You must have failed to please him.' Then if they are unlucky they will be beaten. So I told them to say that they were kept for the night. Didn't you notice that attendant telling Emerald Ring to eat? That is their sign." After he had spoken Emerald Flower said to Emerald Ring "You plead to Mr. T'ieh to take pity on you." Mr. Decadent said "I shall still pay the sum of money, for no other reason than to let her go back, in order that she may have peace and I may have peace." Emerald Flower gave a little snort and said "It is true that you may have peace, but she certainly will not." Emerald Ring turned herself to face Mr. Decadent, saying

夜裏餓着肚子，碰巧還省不了一頓打，因為老鴇兒總是說：客人既留你到這時候，自然是喜歡你的，爲甚麼還叫你回來，一定是應酬不好。碰的不巧，就是一頓。所以我纔叫他們告訴說都已留下了。你不看見他那夥計叫翠環吃菜麼？那就是個暗號。』說到此處，翠花向翠環道：『你自己央告央告鐵爺，可憐可憐你罷。』老殘道：『我也不爲別的，錢是照數給，讓他回去，他也安靜，我也安靜些。』翠花鼻子裏哼了一聲說：『你安靜是實，他可安靜不了的！』

翠環歪過身子，把臉兒向着老殘道：『鐵爺，我看你老的樣子，怪慈悲的，怎麼就不肯慈悲我們孩子一點嗎？你老屋裏的炕，一丈二尺長呢，你老鋪蓋不過古三尺寬，還多着九尺地呢，就捨不得賞給我們孩子避一宿難嗎？倘若賞臉要我孩子伺候呢，裝烟倒茶也還會做；倘若惡嫌的很呢，求你老包涵些，賞個炕畸角混一夜，這就恩典得大了。』

老殘伸手在衣服袋裏，將鑰匙取出，遞與翠花，說：『聽你們怎麼攪去罷。只是我的行李，可動不得的。』翠花站起來，遞與那家人，說：『勞你駕！看他夥計送進去，就出來，請你把門就鎖上。勞駕！勞駕！』

"Mr. T'ieh, you seem so kind; why won't you be kind to us children? The bed in your room is twelve feet long and your bedding only takes three feet, still leaving nine feet empty. Couldn't you give some to me as a refuge for a night? If you condescend to want my attendance, I can serve you opium and tea, and if you find me very disagreeable I hope you will allow me to pass a night on the corner of your bed as a great favour."

Then Mr. Decadent took the key out of his pocket and gave it to Emerald Flower, saying "You can do what you like; only don't touch my bedding." Emerald Flower stood up and gave the key to the servant, saying "Thank you very much. See that the man takes the bedding in and comes out; then please lock up the room. Thank you very very much." The servant took the key and went out.

Mr. Decadent patted Emerald Ring's cheek and said "What district are you from? What is the name of your mistress, and when were you sold to her?" Emerald Ring said "My mistress is called Chang" After she had said this she stopped, took her handkerchief out of her sleeve to wipe her tears, and wiped and wiped, unable to speak. "Don't cry" said Mr. Decadent. "I asked about your family in order to cheer you up. If you don't want to talk about it, you needn't. Why become so sad?" "I have no family" said Emerald Ring, and Emerald Flower said "Don't be angry, sir. This child's temper is bad, so that she often gets beaten; but actually she has reason to be sad. Two years ago her family was very wealthy, but last year she was sold here, and because she had never suffered much when she was young, she could not please people; although actually our mistress is one of the best of her kind, and by

那家人接着鑰匙去了。

老殘用手撫摩着翠環的臉說道：『你是那裏人？你媽兒姓甚麼？你是幾歲賣給他的？』翠環道：『俺這媽姓張……』說了一句，就不說了，袖子內取出一塊手巾來擦眼淚，擦了又擦，只是不作聲。老殘道：『你別哭呀！我問你老底子家裏事，也是替你解悶的，你不願意說，就不說也行，何苦難受呢！』翠環道：『我原底子沒有家。』

翠花道：『你老別生氣！這孩子就是這脾氣不好，所以常挨打；其實也怪不得他難受；二年前，他家還是個大財主呢。去年纔賣到俺媽這來，他爲自小兒沒受過這個折蹬，所以就種種的不討好，其實俺媽在這裏頭，算是頂善和的哩。他到了明年，恐怕要過今年這個日子，也沒有了。』說到這裏，那翠環竟掩面嗚咽起來。翠花喊道：『嘿！這孩子可是不想活了！你瞧老爺們叫你來爲開心的，你可哭開自己咧！那不得罪人嗎？快別哭咧！』

老殘道：『不必不必，讓他哭哭很好，你想他憋了一肚子的悶氣，到那裏去哭？難得遇見我們兩個沒有脾氣的人，讓他哭個够，也算痛快一回。』用手拍

next year she won't have such a good time as she is now." By now Emerald Ring had covered her face and begun crying, and Emerald Flower shouted at her "This child evidently doesn't want to go on living: The gentlemen order you here to cheer them up, and you start crying yourself. Won't that make the gentlemen angry? You'd better stop." "Don't stop her" said Mr. Decadent. "It's good for her to cry. She has been feeling wronged all this time without any place to cry; but today she has fortunately met us who are kind-hearted, and she can cry her fill until she feels more comfortable." Then he patted Emerald Ring and said "It doesn't matter if you cry aloud. I know Mr. Huang is not superstitious. You cry as much as you like." Mr. Huang beside him shouted "Emerald Ring, good girl, go on crying. I shall be grateful if you cry away all my sorrows too." When they heard this they all laughed, and even Emerald Ring, covering her face, laughed too.

Actually Emerald Ring knew that before visitors one must not cry; but when Mr. Decadent asked about her family, and Emerald Flower mentioned that two years before she was still wealthy, it made her sad, so that her tears began to fall and she could not stop them. When she heard Mr. Decadent say "She has been sad all this time without any place to cry. Let her cry her fill until she feels more comfortable." she thought "Since I fell into misfortune no one has been so considerate. It shows that not all men in the world treat women like dirt; only I don't know how many men there are like this in the world, it would be nice to meet a few in my life; for since I have met one there must be others." Thinking like this she forgot all her sorrow, and she was just turning her head to hear what

着翠環道：『你就放聲哭也不要緊！我知道黃老爺就沒忌諱的人，只管哭，不要緊的。』

黃人瑞在旁大聲嚷道：『小翠環！好孩子！你哭罷！勞你駕把你黃老爺肚裏斃的一肚子悶氣，也替我哭出來罷！』大家聽了這話，都不禁發了一笑，連翠環遮着臉也撲嗤的笑了一聲。

原來翠環本來知道，在客人面前，萬不能哭的，只因老殘問到他老家的事，又被翠花說出他二年前還是個大財主，所以觸起他的傷心，故眼淚不由的直穿出來，要強忍也忍不住。及至聽到老殘說：『他受了一肚子悶氣，到那裏去哭，讓他哭個够，也算痛快一回，』心裏想道：『自從落難以來，從沒有人這樣體貼過，可見世界上男子，並不是個個人乃是拿女兒家當糞土一般作踐的。只不知道像這樣的人，世界上多不多？我今生還想遇見幾個？想既能遇見一個，恐怕一定總還有呢。』心裏只顧這們盤算，倒把剛纔的傷心，盤算的忘記了。反側着耳朵聽他們再說什麼，忽然被黃人瑞喊着，要託他替哭，怎樣不好笑呢？所以含着兩包眼淚。撲嗤的笑了一聲，並抬起頭來看了人瑞一眼。那知被他們看了這個形景，越發笑個不止。

they were saying when suddenly Mr. Huang called out asking her to cry for him, which sounded very funny. So with tears in her eyes she laughed, raising her head to look at Mr. Huang; and when the others saw her like this they could not help laughing too. Emerald Ring's heart at this moment was in utter confusion, and seeing them laugh hysterically, she laughed hysterically with them.

Then Mr. Decadent said "Now that we have cried and laughed. I would still like to know how she was wealthy two years ago. Emerald Flower you tell me." Emerald Flower said "She is from Ch'i Tung district. Her family was named T'ien and lived outside the South Gate of the district, where they possessed some two hundred acres of land; and they also had a grocery shop in the town. Her parents only had her and her younger brother, who is just five years old this year, and there was also a grandmother. The land by that Ta Ts'ing river is mainly grown with cotton, and each acre is worth over a hundred strings of cash. They possessed more than two hundred acres, worth more than twenty thousand strings of cash, and together with the shop it amounted to more than three hundred thousand. The proverb says "With ten thousand strings of cash of property one can be considered wealthy." They had thirty thousand strings, so shouldn't that be considered very wealthy?"

Mr. Decadent said. "If her family had thirty thousand strings worth of property, they were very well off. How could they become poor, and poor to that extent?" Emerald Flower said "It all happened in a flash. The family was ruined in three days. It came about the year before last. The Yellow River had been flooding every other year, and Provincial Governor Chang was ever so worried about it.

翠環此刻心裏一點主意沒有，看看他們傻笑，只好糊裏糊塗，陪着他們嘻嘻的傻了一回。

老殘便道：『哭也哭過了，笑也笑過了，我還要問你，怎麼二年前他還是個大財主？翠花！你說給我聽聽。』

翠花道：『他是俺這齊東縣的人，他家姓田，在這齊東縣南門外，有二頃多地，在城裏還有個雜貨鋪子，他爹媽只養活了他，還有他個小兄弟，今年纔五六歲呢。他還有個老奶奶。俺們這大清河邊上的地，多半是棉花地，一畝地總要值一百多串錢呢。他有二頃多地，不就是兩萬多串錢嗎？連上鋪子，就穀三萬多了。俗說萬貫家財，一萬貫家財，就算財主，他有三萬貫錢，不算個大財主嗎？』

老殘道：『如此說來，他家有三萬貫家財，是很好過日子的一家人家了。但是怎麼就會窮呢？一窮就窮到這個地步呢？』

翠花道：『那纔快呢！不消三天，就家破人亡了！這就是前年的事情。俺這黃河不是三年兩頭的倒口子嗎？莊撫台爲這個事，焦的甚麼似的。聽說有個什麼大人，是南方有名的才子，他就拿了一本甚麼書給

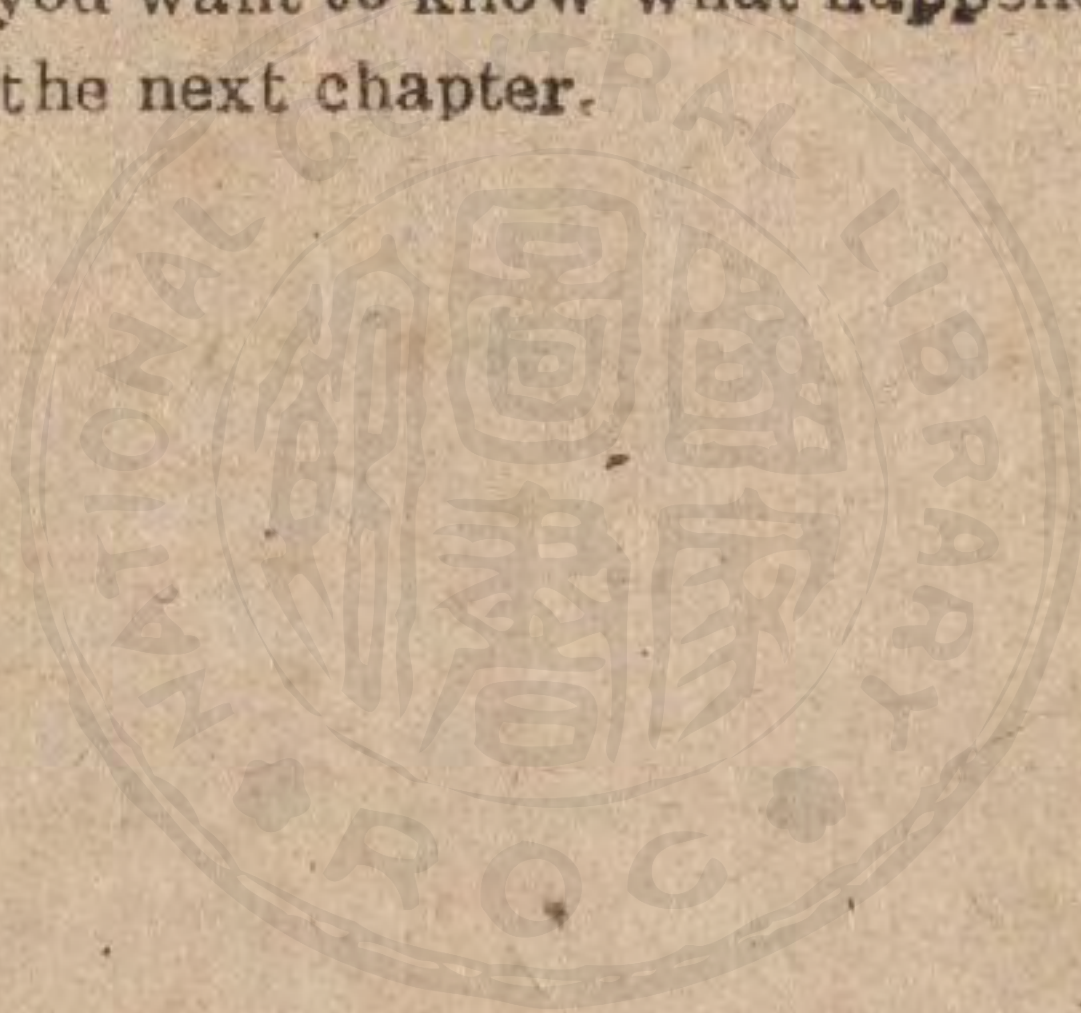
It seems there was some high official who was a famous scholar in South China, who showed some book to the Governor and said "The trouble with this river is that it is too narrow. You will not have peace until it is made broader. You must pull down the people's dikes and keep to the main dikes." Thereupon all the high officials approved, but the Governor said "How about the people between the dikes? We shall have to pay them to move their homes." But those cursed high officials said "You must not let the people know. Consider, the distance between the dikes is some two miles broad and two hundred miles long, and hundreds of thousands of families live there. If you let them know, those hundreds of thousands of men will defend their dikes and make it impossible to pull them down." The Governor could do nothing, so he nodded his head and sighed, and we heard that he even shed a few tears.

"That spring they speedily repaired the main dike and built a secondary dike on the south bank in the district of Chi Yang, and these two dikes were the weapon to kill those hundreds of thousands of people; but the poor people did not know it. Then came the sixth month when the people said "The water is rising, the water is rising." The guards on the dikes were kept busy from morning to night, and the water in the river rose one or two feet every day, until in less than ten days it was little lower than the dike, already some twenty feet above the plain. By the middle of the month the runners on the dike kept coming and going all the time, and on the third day at noon the camps blew their trumpets, gathered their guards and sent them all to the main dike. At that time some shrewd people said "It looks bad. Probably trouble is coming. We had better go back

撫台看，說：「這個河的毛病是太窄了，非放寬了不能安靜，必得廢了民埝，退守大隄。」這話一出來，那些候補大人，個個說好。撫台就說：「這些隄裏百姓怎樣好呢？須得給錢叫他們搬開纔好。」誰知道這些總辦候補道王八蛋大人們說：「可不能叫百姓知道。你想這隄埝中間五六里寬，六百里長，總有十幾萬家，一旦被他們知道了，這幾十萬人守住民埝，這還廢得掉嗎？」莊撫台沒法，點點頭，嘆了一口氣聽說還落了幾點眼淚。這年春天就趕緊修了大隄。在濟陽縣南岸，又打了一道隔隄。誰知這兩樣東西，就是殺這幾十萬人的一把大刀，可憐俺們這小百姓，那裏知道呢。

『看看到了六月初幾裏，只聽人說：「大汛到咧，大汛到咧。」那埝上的隊伍，不斷的兩頭跑。那河裏的水，一天長一尺多，一天長一尺多，不到十天工夫，那水就比埝頂低不很遠了，比着那埝裏的平地，怕不有一兩丈高。到了十三四裏，只見那埝上的報馬，一會一匹，一會一匹，不住的來來往往。到了第三天嚮午時候，各營盤裏掌號齊人，把隊伍都打到大隄上去。那時就有急伶人道：「不好說，恐怕要出亂子，俺們趕緊回去預備搬家罷。」誰知道那一夜裏，三更時候，

quickly and prepare to move our homes." But who knew that that night at midnight there would be a great storm. They only heard a great roar, and the water of the Yellow River poured down on them like a mountain. The people in the villages were mostly sleeping in their houses when with this tremendous roar the water rushed in, and by the time they had woken to fly away, the water was already over their roofs. The night was dark, the wind high, and there was a torrent of rain and flood. What do you think they could do?" If you want to know what happened afterwards, you must read the next chapter.



又趕上大風大雨，只聽得稀里花拉，那黃河水就像山一樣的倒下去了。那些村莊上的人，大半都還睡在屋裏，呼的一聲，水就進去，驚醒過來，連忙就跑，水已經過了屋檐；天又黑，風又大，雨又急，水又猛，你老想，這時候有甚麼法子呢？』未知後事如何，且看下回分解。



CHAPTER XI.

IT is said that Emerald Flower went on with her story: "By this time it was nearly dawn. The wind dropped, the rain ceased, the clouds dispersed and the moon came out and shone brightly. The state of the village could not be seen, only by the people's dike there were people clinging to doors, tables, chairs and benches, swept against the dike and clambering up it; while the people who lived on the dike took bamboo poles and hastened to rescue those in the water, rescuing quite a number. Those whose lives were thus saved after the first breath thought how all their family was lost and only themselves surviving, and all of them lamented bitterly. Children called upon their fathers and mothers, wives wept for their husbands, parents mourned for their children, until the whole place resounded with the sound of wailing for nearly two hundred miles. You can imagine how pitiable it was, sir."

Then Emerald Ring took up the story, saying "On that fifteenth day of the sixth month, my mother and I happened to be in our shop at the South Gate when in the middle of the night we heard people calling out "The water is coming!" Everybody who heard it hastily got up. That day had been particularly hot, and most people had gone to sleep in the courtyard in their underclothes, only going in when it started to rain. They had just fallen into a doze when they heard the shouting outside, and hurried out to the street to look. The city gate was also opened and people ran outside.

第 十 一 章

話說翠花接着說道：『到了四更多天，風也息了，雨也止了，雲也散了，透出一個月亮，湛明湛明的。那村莊裏頭的情形，是看不見的了，只有靠民埕近的，還有那抱着門板或桌椅板凳的，飄到民埕跟前，都就上了民埕，還有那民埕上住的人，拿竹竿子趕着撈人，也撈起來的不少，這些人得了性命，喘過一口氣來，想一想一家人都沒有了，就剩了自己，沒有一個不是嘔吐痛哭：喊爹叫媽的，哭丈夫的，疼兒子的，一片哭聲，五百多里路長，你老看慘不慘呢？』

翠環接着道：『六月十五那一天，俺娘兒們正在大南門鋪子裏，半夜裏聽見人嚷說：「水下來了！」大家聽說，都連忙起來。這一天本來很熱，人多半是穿着褂袴，在院子裏睡的，雨來的時候，纔進屋子去，剛睡了一朦朧覺，就聽外邊嚷起來了，連忙跑到街上看，城也開了，人都往城外跑。城圈子外頭本有個小埕——

Outside the city there was a small dike used to let out water every year; it was about six feet high, and all those people had gone out to reinforce it. At that time the rain had only just stopped, and it was still dark; but in a little while one could just see the people outside the city rushing back as if their lives depended on it, while the district magistrate was actually not in his sedan-chair, but was running into the city with the rest. He got up on the city wall and one could just hear him calling out "People outside must not move in their things. Tell everybody to come in at once! The city is to be closed immediately. There must be no delay!" We all climbed on to the wall too to look, and saw many people using straw to wrap up mud, ready to seal up the city gate. The district magistrate above the city shouted "Everybody is in now! Close the gates immediately!" By the citadel bundles of mud were already prepared, and after they had closed the gates they sealed them up. I had an uncle called Ch'i who lived outside the city, and he was up on the wall too.

After a little while the clouds sank to the mountains and the moon was very bright. My mother saw Uncle Ch'i and asked him "How is it so bad this year?" Uncle Ch'i said "Isn't it. In past years when the flood came, at the start it was only about a foot high, and when full it was some two feet high, never exceeding three feet; while by the time of one meal the worst flood would have passed, so that it was about two feet high on an average. This year the flood is terrible. At the start it was more than a foot, and almost at once it rose to over two feet. The magistrate seeing that it looked bad, and fearing the small dike would not stand against it, told people quickly to enter the city.

每年倒口子用的埝——有五尺多高，這些人都出去守小埝。那時，雨纔住，天還陰着。一霎時，只見城外人拚命價往城裏跑，又見縣官也不坐轎子，跑進城裏來，上了城牆，只聽一片聲嚷說：「城外人家不許搬東西！叫人趕緊進城，就要關城，不能等了。」俺們也都爬到城牆上去看，這裏許多人用蒲包裝泥，預備堵城門。縣大老爺在城上喊：「人都進了城了！趕緊關城！」城廂裏頭本有預備的土包，關上城，就用土包把門後頭堵上了。俺有個齊二叔住在城外，也上了城牆。

「過了些時，雲彩已經回了山，月亮很亮的，俺媽看見齊二叔就問道：「今年怎麼這們厲害？」齊二叔說：「可不是呢。往年倒口子，水下來，初起不過尺把高，正水頭到了，也不過二尺多高，沒有過三尺的；總不到頓把飯的工夫，水頭就過去，總不過二尺來往水。今年這水真霸道，一來就一尺多，一霎就過了二尺，縣大老爺看勢頭不好，恐怕小埝守不住，叫人趕緊進城罷，那時水已將近有四尺的光景了。大哥這兩

At that time the water had already reached nearly four feet. I haven't seen Brother for the last few days. Was he in the village? I feel rather worried." Then my mother cried, saying "That's just it."

"At that time all we could hear was people on the city wall shouting "The water has passed the small dike" and the people on the wall all rushed down. My mother sat sobbing on the ground, and said "I shall die here and not return." I could do nothing but cry by her side, and I heard people saying "Water is leaking through the wall!" and then innumerable people rushed past again. They did not care whether they were people's families or shops, but snatched up whatever bedding or clothes they could, taking them to stop up the leakages at the city gate. Very soon they had taken all the clothes from the tailors on the street, and all the cloth from the cloth shops to stop up the cracks in the city wall; and then I heard them say "It's not leaking now." Again I heard "The bundles of mud are probably too few to keep the water out." Whereupon a crowd of people ran to our shop to seize the rice bags and stuff them against the leaks in the wall. Soon all the rice was moved away, and they also carried away all the paper in the paper shops and all the cotton in the cotton shops.

By then it was already dawn, and my mother was dazed with crying. I could do nothing but sit on the ground and keep her company, and I kept hearing people saying "This flood is really fearful. It must be more than ten feet high. No one ever heard of such a flood before." Then some of our shop assistants came and carried my mother and myself back. When we reached our shop, there was a sorry sight, and the assistants told us "Sacks of rice from our shop were

天沒見，敢是在莊子上麼？可担心得很呢！」俺媽就哭了，說：「可不是呢！」

「當時只聽城上一片嘈嚷說：「小塄漫咧！小塄漫咧！」城上的人呼呼價往下跑，俺媽哭着就地一坐，說：「俺就死在這兒不回去了。」俺沒法，只好陪着在旁邊哭。只聽人說：「城門縫裏過水。」那無數人就亂跑，也不管是人家，是店是鋪子，抓着被褥，就是被褥，抓着衣服，就是衣服，全拿去塞城門縫子；一會兒，把咱街上估衣鋪的衣服，布店裏的布，都拿去塞了城門縫子；漸漸聽說：「不過水了。」又聽嚷道：「土包單弱，恐怕擋不住。」這就看着多少人到俺店裏去搬糧食口袋，往城門洞裏去填，一會看着搬空了；又有那紙店裏的紙，棉花店裏的棉花，又是搬個乾盡。

『那時天也明了，俺媽也哭昏了，俺也沒法，只好坐地守着。耳朵裏不住的聽人說：「這水可真了不得！城外屋子已經過了屋檐，這水頭怕不快有一丈多深嗎？從來沒聽說有過這們大的水！」後來還是店裏幾個夥計上來，把俺媽同俺架了回去。回到店裏，那

used to barricade the city wall, and the loose grain in our granary was all stolen by lawless people. Only what was left on the ground we swept together, and it came to some thirty bushels." There were two women servants in our shop whose homes were in the country, and when they heard of the great flood and knew that their families must have perished, they cried as if they no longer cared to live.

This went on till the sun was high, when the people in our shop succeeded in reviving my mother, and we all had some millet porridge. My mother, when she came to her senses, opened her eyes and asked "Where is grandmother?" They said "She was sleeping in her room, and we did not like to disturb her." My mother said "We shall have to ask her to get up to eat something." But when she went to her room she found grandmother was not sleeping but had died of fright; for when she felt her nostrils there was no breath. When my mother saw this, the porridge she had eaten was thrown up with blood, and she fainted once more, but luckily we had an old maid servant Wang, who felt all over the old lady's body, and suddenly cried out "It's all right. Her heart is still warm." Thereupon they quickly tried artificial respiration, and called for some ginger soup. In the afternoon both my grandmother and my mother recovered consciousness, so the whole family was safe. Two of our shop people were sitting in the front court talking: "They say that the water outside the city wall has reached a height of some fifteen feet. This old city wall may not stand long, and once the water enters the city there will not be a single person left alive." The other said "The magistrate is still in the city, so it must be all right."

Mr. Decadent said to Mr. Huang, "I also heard of this

可不像樣子了，聽見夥計說：「店裏整布袋的糧食，都填滿了城門洞，圍子裏的散糧，被亂人搶了一個精光，只有潑灑在地下的，掃了掃，還有兩三担糧食。」店裏原有兩個老媽子，他們家也在鄉下，聽說這們大的水，想必老老小小也都是沒有命了，直哭的想死不想活。

「一直鬧到太陽大歪西，夥計們纔把俺媽媽灌醒了，大家吃了兩口小米稀飯；俺媽醒了，睜開眼看看，說：「老奶奶呢？」他們說：「在屋裏睡覺呢，不敢驚動他老人家。」俺媽說：「也得請他老人家起來吃點呀。」待得走到屋裏，誰知道他老人家不是睡覺，是嚇死了；摸了摸鼻孔裏，已經沒有氣；俺媽看見，哇的一聲，吃的兩口稀飯，跟着一口血塊子一齊嘔出來，又昏過去了。虧得個老王媽，在老奶奶身上儘自摩挲，忽然嘆道：「不要緊，心口裏滾熱的呢。」忙着嘴對嘴的接氣，又喊快拿盞湯來，到了下午時候，奶奶也過來了，俺媽也過來了，這算是一家平安了。有兩個夥計在前院說話：「聽說城下的水，有一丈四五了，

flood. Who was responsible for it, and what book did he take as authority? Do you know?" Mr. Huang said "Since I came the year after the flood I only knew of it by hearsay, and I don't know whether what I heard was correct or not. People said it was the idea of Inspector Shih Chun-fu, and the book he quoted as authority was the memoranda on river conservancy by Chia Jang of the Han dynasty. "According to the memorandum" he said "In ancient times the kingdoms of Ch'i, Chao and Wei had the Yellow River as their common boundary. The kingdoms of Chao and Wei lay in mountainous regions, while the kingdom of Ch'i was low lying; so Ch'i built a dike eight miles from the river. Then the river on the east side reached the land of Ch'i, and on the west side flooded the lands of Chao and Wei, so the kingdoms of Chao and Wei also constructed dikes eight miles from the river." That day all the officials were present when the Inspector pointed out these lines to them saying "This shows the distance between the two dikes" was some sixteen miles in the age of the Warring States; thus they had no trouble from the Yellow River. Now the distance between the two dikes is little more than a mile, and even the distance between the two main dikes is only about six miles, less than half the distance under the ancient system. Thus unless the people's dikes are pulled down, the river will cause unceasing calamity." The Governor said "I understand this reasoning; but between the dikes there are villages and farms. If we were to carry out your proposal, would we not destroy tens of thousands of families?" But then Inspector Shih showed the memorandum to the Governor again, saying "Please read what it says here: 'People opposing this may say this scheme will destroy people's

這個多年的老城，恐怕守不住，倘若是進了城，怕一個活的也沒有。」又一個夥計道：「縣大老爺還在城裏，料想是不要緊的。」』

老殘對人瑞道：『我也聽說，究竟是誰出的這個主意？拿的是甚麼書！你老哥知道麼？』

人瑞道：『我是庚寅年來的，這是己丑年的事，我也是聽人說，未知確否。據說是史鈞甫史觀察創的議，拿的就是賈讓的治河策，他說：「當年齊與趙魏，以河爲境，趙魏瀕山，齊地卑下，作隄去河二十五里，河水東抵齊地，則西泛趙魏，趙魏亦爲隄，去河二十五里。」那天司道都在院上，他將這幾句指與大家看，說：「可見戰國時兩隄相距是五十里地了。所以沒有河患。今日兩民埝相距，不過三四里，卽兩大隄相距，尙不足二十里，比之古人，未能及半，若不廢民埝河患斷無已時。」宮保說：「這個道理，我也明白，只是這夾隄裏面，盡是村莊，均屬膏腴之地，豈不要破壞幾萬家的生產嗎？」他又指治河策給宮保看，說：「請看這一段說：難者將曰，若此敗壞城廓田廬家墓以萬

buildings, farms, houses and tombs by tens of thousands, causing people to murmur. But I say, when Yu pacified the flood he destroyed the mountains which stood in his path. Thus he even destroyed the work of Nature, and this is after all only the handiwork of men?" Then he said "If you are too tender-hearted over small matter you will jeopardise affairs of great moment. Your Excellency may pity the homes of the people between the dikes, but does not the flood work great havoc every year? This is a project which will ensure eternal peace; thus Chia Jang said in his memorandum 'Our great Han empire has thousands of miles of territory why should we contend for a few feet of ground with the river?'. Once this work is achieved, the river will be pacified, and the people will rest in peace for thousands of years. Thus it is an excellent plan. Moreover in the Han dynasty Chinese territory was only some thousands of miles in extent; yet they would not contend with the river; now the territory of our empire is much greater, and if we contend with the river for land, shall we not cause former sages to laugh at posterity?"

"Then he went on to quote other criticisms of the memoranda saying" These three memoranda have become immortal classics; but since the Han dynasty those in charge of river conservancy have all adopted inferior plans, alas! Throughout past dynasties all scholars knew that the three memoranda of Chia Jang were classics, but unfortunately the men responsible for river conservancy were not scholars, and thus the great deed could not be achieved again. If your Excellency adopts this excellent plan, Chia Jang will be grateful to you as his successor after two thousand years, and your achievements will be recorded in history, winning

數，百姓怨恨。賈讓說，昔大禹治水，山陵當路者毀之，故鑿龍門，闢伊闕，折砥柱，破碣石，墮斷天地之性，尙且爲之，况此乃人工所造，何足言也？且又說，小不忍，則亂大謀，宮保以爲夾隄裏的百姓，廬墓生產可惜，難道年年決口，就不傷人命嗎！此一勞永逸之事；所以賈讓說：大漢方制萬里，豈其與水爭咫尺之地哉？此功一立，河定民安，千載無恙，故謂之上策。漢朝方制，不過萬里，尙不當與水爭地，我國家方制數萬里，若反與水爭地，豈不令前賢笑後生嗎？」

『又指諸同人批評云：「三策遂成不刊之典，然自漢以來，治河者率下策也。悲夫！」漢晉唐宋元明以來，讀書人無不知賈讓治河策，等於聖經賢傳；惜治河者無讀書人，所以大功不立也。宮保若能行此上策，豈不是賈讓二千年後，得一知己，功垂竹帛，萬世不朽？」宮保皺着眉頭道：「但是一件要緊的事，只是我捨不得這十幾萬百姓現在的身家。」兩司道：「如果可以一勞永逸，何不另籌一筆款項，把百姓遷徙出去呢？」宮保說：「只有這個辦法，尙屬較妥。」後來

you immortal fame for thousands of generations." But the Governor wrinkled his brow and said "I have only one objection: I cannot afford to sacrifice these hundreds of thousands of people." Some officials said "If this will cause eternal peace, why should we not raise some money and move the people away?" The Governor said "That would be the only thing to do." Later I heard they raised some three hundred thousand taels of silver, preparing to move the people. But I don't know why they did not move them after all."

Then Mr. Huang said to Emerald Ring "What happened to you after that? Go on with your story." Emerald Ring said "Later my mother decided to leave all to fate, and that if the flood came, we must perish." "I was in Ch'i Tung district too that year" said Emerald Flower. "I was staying at the North Gate, because my aunt lived there near the people's dike. There were good shops outside the North Gate, and the two small dikes beyond the street were of considerable size; people said they were thirteen feet high. The ground there was high, so the water did not reach the North Gate. On the sixteenth of that month I went to the city wall and saw over so many things floating in the river. There were chests, tables, chairs, benches, windows and doors, to say nothing of the dead people floating everywhere, scattered here and there, and with nobody having time to take up the corpses. The wealthy families were planning to move away, but they could not hire boats." "Where were the boats?" asked Mr. Decadent. She said "They were all commandeered for distributing bread to the people." "Distributing bread to whom?" asked Mr. Decadent. "Why did they need so many boats?" "That was really a good

聽說籌了三十萬銀子，預備遷民，至於爲甚麼不遷，我却不知道了。」

人瑞對着翠環說道：「後來怎麼樣呢？你說呀！」

翠環道：「後來我媽拿定主意，聽他去，水來俺就淹死去。」

翠花道：「那一年我也在齊東縣，俺住在北門，俺三姨家北門，離民埝相近，北門外大街鋪子又整齊，所以街後兩個小埝都不小，聽說是一丈三的頂，那邊地勢又高，所以北門沒有漫過來。十六那天，俺到城牆上，看見那河裏漂的東西，不知有多少呢；也有箱子，也有桌椅板凳，也有窗戶門扇，那死人更不待說漂的滿河都是，不遠一個，不遠一個，也沒人顧得去撈。有錢的打算搬家，就是雇不出船來。」

老殘道：「船呢？上那裏去了？」翠花道：「都被官裏拿了，差送饅頭去了。」老殘道：「送饅頭給誰吃？要這些船幹啥？」

翠花道：「饅頭功德，可就大了！那莊子上的人，被水沖的有一大半；還有一小半呢，都是急伶點的人，

deed" said Emerald Flower, "Of the people in the villages, more than half were swept away by the flood, while those who survived were the clever ones who climbed on to their roof-tops when the flood came. So in every village there were hundreds of people on the roof-tops; but they were surrounded by water, so how could they get food? Some of them were so hungry that they committed suicide by jumping into the water. Fortunately there were commissionairs sent by the Governor distributing bread everywhere in boats, three pieces for each grown up and two pieces for each child. The next day the commissionairs came with empty boats and carried the people to the North bank. Wasn't that a good deed? However there were many fools who stayed on the roofs and would not come down, and when asked why they said that in the water the Governor would send them bread, but if they went to the North bank nobody would provide for them and they would die of hunger. Actually the Governor only distributed bread for a few days and then stopped; so that those people were starved to death. Weren't they fools?"

"This is really fantastic" said Mr. Decadent to Mr. Huang. "Whether it was Inspector Shih's idea or not, the man who started this scheme did not have any evil intention, nor did he act from any selfish motives; but because he could only read books, and had no experience, every step he made was false. Thus Mencius said 'It is better not to believe in books, at all, rather than to believe in them implicitly,' and this is true not only regarding river conservancy. Of all great disasters, only some thirty percent have been owing to treachery, some seventy percent being due to inexperienced scholars." Then he asked Emerald Ring

一見水來，就上了屋頂；所以每一個莊子裏屋頂上，總有百把幾十人。四面都是水，到那兒摸吃的去呢？有餓急了，重行跳到水裏自盡的。虧得有撫台派的委員，駕着船各處去送饅頭，——大人三個，小孩兩個。——第二天又有委員駕着空船，把他們送到北岸，這不是好極的事嗎？誰知這些渾蛋，還有許多蹲在屋頂上不肯下來呢？問他爲啥？他說在河裏有撫台給他送饅頭，到了北岸，就沒人管他吃，那就餓死了。其實撫台送了幾天，就不送了，他們還是餓死；你說這些人渾不渾呢？」

老殘向人瑞道：「這事真正荒唐！是史觀察不是，雖未可知，然創此議之人，却也不是壞心，並無一毫爲己私見在內；只因但會讀書，不諳世故，舉手動足便錯。孟子所以說：「盡信書，則不如無書。」豈但河工爲然，天下大事，壞於奸臣者十之三四。壞於不通事故之君子者，倒有十分之六七也。」又問翠環道：「後來你爹找着了沒有？還是就被水冲去了呢？」翠環收淚道：「那還不是跟水去了嗎！要是活着，能不

"Did you find your father afterwards, or was he swept away by the flood?" Emerald Ring wiped her tears and said "He must have been swept away by the flood. If he were alive wouldn't he have gone home?" Then they all sighed.

Mr. Decadent then asked Emerald Flower "Just now you said that next year she would not even have such a good time as she is having now. What did you mean by that?" Emerald Flower said "Our mistress' husband is dead, and for his funeral more than a hundred strings of cash were spent. Then the other day our mistress gambled at dice and lost two or three hundred strings of cash, making her altogether over four hundred strings short; so that this year she can't possibly manage. So the other day she decided to sell Emerald Ring to Kuai the Baldhead. This Baldhead is notoriously harsh, so that if there is one day when you don't have a visitor, she takes heated-iron-tongs to brand you. Our mistress wants three hundred taels of silver from her but she will only give six hundred strings of cash, so they have not yet come to an agreement. Just think, how many days are there left till New Year? The time is drawing nearer and nearer. By New Year she will certainly have to sell her, and once Emerald Ring is sold, don't you suppose she will have all she can bear?" Mr. Decadent heard and made no comment, while Emerald Ring wiped away her tears.

Huang Jen-jui said "Old Decadent, when I said just now that I wanted to discuss their affairs with you, it was just on account of this. I think to see an honest child condemned to such a hell is really a pity. I have reckoned that this is a matter of not moree than thre hundred taels

回家來嗎？」大家嘆息了一回。

老殘又問翠花道：「你纔說，他到了明年，只怕要過今年這個日子，也沒有了，這話是個甚麼緣故？」

翠花道：「俺這個爹，不是死了嗎？喪事裏多花了一百幾十吊錢，前日俺媽賭錢擲骰子，又輸了二三百吊錢，共總虧空四百多吊，今年的年是萬過不去的了；所以前兒打算把環妹賣給蒯二禿子家。這蒯二禿子，出名的利害，一天沒有客，就要拿火筷子烙人。俺媽要他三百銀子，他給了六百吊錢，所以沒有說妥。你老想，現在到年，還能有多少天？這日子眼看着越過越緊，倘若到了年下，怕他不賣嗎？這一賣，翠環可就穀他難受了！」老殘聽了，默無一言。翠環却只揩淚。

黃人瑞道：「殘哥！我纔說爲他們的事情，要同你商議，正是這個緣故。我想眼看着一個老實孩子，送到鬼門關裏頭去，實在可憐！算起不過三百銀子的事情，我願意出一半，那一半找幾個朋友湊湊；你老哥也隨便出幾兩，不拘多少。但是這個名我却不能担，倘若你老哥能把他要回去，這事就容易辦了，你看好

of silver, and I am willing to put up half that amount if I can find friends to make up the other half. Won't you contribute a few taels, just as much as you like? Only I can't give my name as the purchaser of the girl. If you could take her back with you, this matter could be very simply arranged. What do you think?" Mr. Decadent said "There is nothing difficult about this. As for the silver, if you put up half, I will put up the other half; for to ask other people for contributions might not be wise. Only it is out of the question for me to take her, and you will have to think of some other scheme."

When Emerald Ring heard this she hastily knelt down before the bed and kotowed to Mr. Huang and Mr. Decadent, saying "My two benefactors and saviours, who are willing to give silver to rescue me from my torment. I don't care what work you give me as slave girl or servant, I shall be grateful for it. Only there is one thing I should tell you: when I was beaten so often in the past, it was not altogether my mistress who was to blame, but was really my own fault. It was because my mother was really starving that she sold me to begin with to this mistress for twenty four strings of cash, out of which she had to pay three or four strings to the intermediary, only leaving twenty strings. Then last Spring my grandmother died, and all the rest of the money was used up. My mother led my younger brother to beg for food, but in half a year through hunger and privation she died too. Then only my younger brother was left, who is six years old this year, and it fell to a certain former neighbour of ours, a Mr. Li who also lives in this Ch'i Ho district and has a small business, to take him away and give him some scraps to eat from time to time.

不好？」

老殘道：「這事不難。銀子呢，既你老哥肯出一半，那一半就是我兄弟出了罷，再要跟人家化緣，就不妥當了。只是我斷不能要他，還得再想法子。」

翠環聽到這裏，慌忙跳下炕來，替黃鐵二公磕了兩個頭，說道：「兩位老爺菩薩，救命恩人，捨得花銀子把我救出火坑，不管做甚麼丫頭老媽子，我都情願，只是有一件事，我得稟明，在前我所以常挨打，也不怪俺這媽，實在是俺自己的過犯。俺媽當初因為實在餓不過了，所以把我賣給俺這媽，得了二十四弔錢，謝犒中人等項，去了三四弔，只落了二十弔錢；接着去年春上，俺奶奶死了，這錢可就光了。俺媽領着俺個小兄弟討飯吃，不上半年，連餓帶苦，也就死了。只剩了俺一個小兄弟，今年六歲，虧了俺有個舊街坊李五爺，現在也住在這齊河縣，做個小生意，他把他領了去，隨便給點吃吃。」

『只是那李五爺他自願還不足的人，那裏還管他飽呢？穿衣服是更不必說了。所以我在二十里鋪的時

"Only that Mr. Li doesn't even have enough for himself, so how can he feed him properly, much less look after his clothes? So when I was in Seven Mile Fair and kind visitors happened to give me a string of cash, after two months I saved up two or three strings of cash, and sent them to him. Now that you kind gentlemen have saved me, if you send me within a distance of a hundred miles, that won't matter, for I shall be able to save a little money to send him; but if I am sent far away I beg you two gentlemen to think of a way so that I can take the child with me, or put him in a temple or find a small family to look after him. Then our T'ien family ancestral ghosts for the last hundred generations will be grateful to you, and will certainly reward you. Alas, our poor T'ien family now depends on this one slender branch." When she had spoken she again burst into tears, while Mr. Huang said "This is not too easy."

"What is difficult about that?" asked Mr. Decadent. "I can think of a way myself." Then he called out "Miss T'ien, there's no need for you to cry; I will guarantee that you and your young brother need not be separated as long as you live. Don't cry! Let us think out a good plan for you. If you confuse us by your crying, we can't think of a good plan. Quickly stop crying." Hearing this Emerald Ring at once restrained her tears, and knocked her head on the ground before them with resounding thumps. Mr. Decadent hastily raised her up, but she had knocked her head so violently that her forehead was bruised and bleeding, so Mr. Decadent quickly made her sit down, and said "Why should you do that?" and having wiped the blood gently from her forehead, he made her lie down on the bed.

Then Mr. Decadent turned to discuss the question with

候，遇着好客給個一吊八百的呢，我就一兩個月攢個三千兩弔的給他寄來。現在蒙兩位老爺救我出來，如在左近二三百里的地方呢，那就不說了，我總能省幾個錢給他寄來；倘要遠去呢，請兩位恩爺總要想法，許我把這個孩子帶着，或寄放在庵裏廟裏，或找個小戶人家養着；俺田家祖上一百世的祖宗做鬼，都感激二位爺的恩典，結草銜環，一定會報答你二位的。可憐田家，就這一線的根苗。」說到這裏，便又嘯吽痛哭起來。人瑞道：『這又是一點難處。』

老殘道：『這也沒有甚麼難，我自有個辦法。』遂喊道：『田姑娘！你不用哭了！包管你姊兒兩個，一輩子也不離開就是了！你別哭！讓我們好替你打主意。你把我們哭昏了，就出不出好主意來了。快快別哭罷！』翠環聽罷，趕緊忍住淚，骨簌骨簌，替他們每人磕了幾個響頭。老殘連忙將他攙起。誰知他磕頭的時候，用力太猛，把額頭上碰了一個大包，包又破了流血呢。老殘扶他坐下說：『這是何苦來呢！』又替他把額上血輕輕揩了，讓他在炕上躺下。

Mr. Huang saying "Regarding the management of this affair, we must work out the different stages. To ransom her is the first stage, and to find her a suitable husband is the second. Regarding ransom, it is divided again into stages; in the first stage we will try private negotiation, and if that fails we will take the case to court. At present other people have offered six hundred strings, so tomorrow we shall call the mistress here and offer her six hundred strings also, then gradually increase the amount. It doesn't do to be too generous with such people, for if we are too generous, she will feel that she has great bargaining power. At this moment the silver exchange is one tael to two strings and seven hundred cash, so three hundred taels can be exchanged for eight hundred strings. This will certainly be enough, including incidental expenditures. Let us wait and see the attitude of the mistress. If she is not obstinate, private negotiation is best, but if she is suspicious and difficult, we will ask the district magistrate to decide the matter for us at court; then we shall again conclude the bargain privately. What do you think?" "Very good, very good" said Mr. Huang, and Mr. Decadent went on "Of course you cannot let your name come into this, and I don't want my name to appear either; so we will say that we are doing it for a relative of ours. When the affair is settled then we will make it clear that we are going to choose her a husband, for otherwise the mistress will not let her go." Mr. Huang said "Very good. This plan is excellent." Mr. Decadent said "Regarding silver, we shall pay fifty fifty, no matter how much it is. But what I have with me on my travels is not enough, so you will have to advance the money for me, and as soon as I return to the provincial capital I shall

於是老殘這就來向人瑞商議說：『我們辦這件事，當分個前後次第：以替他贖身爲第一步，以替他擇配爲第二步。贖身一事，又分兩層：以私商爲第一步，公斷爲第二步。此刻別人出他六百弔，我們明天把他領家的叫來也先出六百弔，隨後再添；此種人不宜過於爽快，你過爽快，他就覺得奇貨可居了。此刻銀價每兩換兩弔七百文，三百兩可換八百一十弔，連一切開銷，一定足用的了。看他領家的來，口氣何如，倘不執拗，自然私了的爲是，如懷疑刁狡呢，就託齊河縣替他當堂公斷一下，仍以私了結局。人翁以爲何如？』

人瑞道：『極是，極是。』

老殘又道：「老哥固然萬無出名之理，兄弟也不能出全名，只說是替個親戚辦的就是了。等到事情辦妥，再揭明擇配的宗旨，不然，領家的是不肯放的。」

人瑞道：『很好！這個辦法，一點不錯。』老殘道：『銀子是你我各出一半，無論用多少，皆是這個分法。但是我行篋中所有，頗不敷用，要請你老兄墊一墊，到了省城，我就還你。』

repay you." "That's all right" said Mr. Huang, "I have more money than necessary for ransoming two Emerald Rings. Provided the matter is satisfactorily arranged it doesn't matter whether you pay me back or not." "Of course I shall pay you back" said Mr. Decadent "I have more than four hundred taels of silver in the bank, so you needn't be afraid that I may not be able to pay, or that I shan't have enough left for my livelihood. You may rest assured." "Then that is settled" said Mr. Huang. "Tomorrow morning I will tell people to summon the mistress."

Emerald Flower said "Don't call for her tomorrow morning, for we have to go back tomorrow morning, and if you call for her then and she knows your intention, she will hide Emerald Ring in the country before discussing business. Then you will have to do as she wants. Besides, these opium smokers do not get up early. The best thing would be tomorrow afternoon, having first told people to fetch us here, you summon the mistress, for then we shall have nothing to fear from her. Only one thing, don't say that I told you this. Emerald Ring is the lucky one who need not fear the mistress any more; but I have still some years to live in this Hell." Mr. Huang said "Of course. That goes without saying. Tomorrow I will go first to the office, and bring a bailiff. If your mistress is difficult, I will entrust Emerald Ring first to the bailiff; then we shall have her at our mercy." Thus saying they all felt very pleased, but if you want to know what happened afterwards, you must read the next chapter.

人瑞道：『那不要緊。贖兩個翠環，我這裏的銀子都用不了呢。只要事情辦妥，老哥還不還部不要緊的。』老殘道：『一定要還的。我在有容堂，還存着四百多銀子呢，你不用怕我出不起，怕害的我沒飯吃，你放心罷。』人瑞道：『就是這們辦。明天早起，就叫他們去喊他領家的去。』

翠花道：『早起你別去喊。明天早起，我們姐兒倆一定要回去的。你老早起一喊，倘若被他們知道這個意思，他一定把環妹妹藏到鄉下去，再講盤子，那就受他的拿捏了。況且他們抽鴉片煙的人，也起不早。不如下午你老先着人叫我們姐兒倆來，然後去叫俺媽，那就不怕他了。只是一件，這事千萬別說我說的，環妹妹是超陞了的人，不怕他，俺還得在火坑裏過活兩年呢。』

人瑞道：『那自然，還要你說嗎？明天我先到縣衙門裏，隨便帶個差人來，倘若你媽作怪，我先把翠環交給差人看管，那就有法制他了。』說着，大家都覺得喜歡得很。未知後事如何，且看下回分解。

CHAPTER XII.

IT is said that no sooner had Mr. Decadent and Mr. Huang decided upon their plan for rescuing Emerald Ring, and just as they stopped speaking, Emerald Ring raised her head and cried out "Look how red the window is!" She had not finished speaking when they heard a great crash and the sound of many voices outside, all shouting "Fire! Fire!" They hastily ran out of the room, and when they raised the door screen they saw that the fire was raging at the back of Mr. Decadent's chamber. Mr. Decadent hastily took out his key and unlocked the door, while Mr. Huang called out "Some people come! Help Mr. T'ieh to move his things out," But when Mr. Decadent unlocked his door and pushed it open, a great cloud of black smoke belched out, and the fire began to spread through the window. At the great belch of smoke Mr. Decadent hastily retreated, but he was tripped up by a brick, and fell down. Just then people arrived to carry things, and they helped Mr. Decadent up and assisted him to the east side.

When they looked at the fire it seemed as if it would spread to the other rooms too, so Mr. Huang's servant, leading others, went to his rooms to carry out his things. Mr. Huang stood in the courtyard crying "Quickly move my suitcase out. Other things can wait." But by then his servant had already moved out the suitcase while the others carried out the rest of Mr. Huang's luggage, putting it at the foot of the eastern wall. The hotel

· 第 十 二 章

話說老殘與黃人瑞，方將如何拔救翠環之法，商議停妥，說到這裏，翠環抬起頭來忽然喊道：『你瞧！窗戶怎樣這們紅呀！』一言未了，只聽得必必剝剝的聲音，外邊人聲嘈雜，大聲喊叫。說：『起火！起火！』幾個連忙跑出上房門來，纔把簾子一掀，只見那火，正是老殘住的廂房後身；老殘連忙身邊摸出鑰匙，丟開樓門上的鎖，黃人瑞大聲喊道：『多來兩個人，幫鐵老爺搬東西！』老殘剛把鐵鎖開了，將門一推，只見房內一大團黑烟，望外一撲，那火舌已自由窗戶裏冒出來了。老殘被那黑烟沖來，趕忙望後一退，却被一塊甌頭絆住，跌了一交，恰好那些來搬東西的人，正自趕到，就勢把老殘扶起，攙過東邊去了。

當下看那火勢，怕要連着上房，黃人瑞的家人，就帶着衆人，進上房去搶搬東西。黃人瑞站在院心裏，

manager had meanwhile brought over several long benches for them to sit down on, and Mr. Huang looked through his things and found that not only was there nothing missing, but there was even one additional piece; so he hastily told people to move these things to the hotel storeroom. Gentle Reader, can you guess what that additional piece was? It was Emerald Flower's bedding. Mr. Huang knew that the magistrate would come to inspect the fire, and if he should see this it would be rather embarrassing, so he ordered servants to move the things away, and said to the two girls "You two had better hide in the store room too. The magistrate will be here presently." When the two girls heard it, they moved down along the wall.

It is said that when the fire started, all the neighbours as well as boatmen and servants, brought barrels and basins to extinguish it. However, as the two banks of the Yellow River were frozen, although there was some flowing water in the middle, people could not reach it, and the big pool behind the hotel was already frozen hard. Outside the city there were only two wells with water, but if they carted this water slowly, barrel by barrel, it would not serve any purpose. However, in the emergency they hit upon a plan: they broke the ice in the pool and threw it into the fire piece by piece, and the ice actually proved more efficacious than water; for wherever a piece of ice was thrown, the flames would die down. The pool was just behind Mr. Huang's rooms, and some seven or eight men stood on the roof, while behind them several dozen people carried ice to the roof, which they took over and threw into the flames. Half the ice fell into the fire and half over the rooms, so that the fire was unable to spread to Mr. Huang's rooms.

大叫道：「趕先把那帳箱搬出！別的却還在後。」說時，黃升已將帳箱搬出，那些人多手雜的，已將黃人瑞箱籠行李都搬出來，放在東牆脚下，店家早已搬了幾條長板凳來，請他們坐。人瑞檢點物件，一樣不少，却還多了一件，趕忙叫人搬往櫃房裏去。看官！你猜多的一件是何物事，原來正是翠花的行李。人瑞知道縣官必來看火，倘若見了，有點難堪，所以叫人搬去，並對二翠道：「你們也往櫃房裏避一避去，立刻縣官就要來的。」二翠聽說，便順牆根走往前面去了。

且說火起之時，四鄰人等，及河工夫役，都尋覓了水桶水盆之類，趕來救火。無奈黃河兩岸俱已凍得實實的，當中雖有流水之處，人却不能去取。店後有個大坑塘，却早凍得如平地了，城外只有兩口井裏有水，你想慢慢一桶一桶打起，有何用呢？這些人人急智生，就把坑裏的冰鑿開，一塊一塊的望火裏投，那知這冰的力量，比水還大，一塊冰投下去，就有一塊地方沒了火頭。這坑正在上房後身，有七八個人立在上房屋脊上，後邊有數十個人運冰上屋，屋上人接着望火裏投，一半投到火裏，一半落在上房屋上，所以火就接不到上房這邊來。

Mr. Decadent and Mr. Huang were by the Eastern wall watching people putting out the fire, when a procession of lanterns and torches heralded the arrival of the magistrate. He led in his men, all carrying long poles with hooks to help put out the fire; but when they entered the gate the fire was already nearly extinguished. Some of them pulled down debris with their hooks, some of them went to fetch thin pieces of ice from the river to throw into the flames to keep them down, and thus the fire was eventually extinguished. The magistrate then caught sight of Mr. Huang standing under the Eastern wall, and came over to greet him, saying "You must have been rather alarmed, sir." Mr. Huang said "I am all right, only my friend suffered considerably." Then he said to the magistrate "Mr. Wang, let me introduce a friend. His name is T'ieh Pu-Tsan." The magistrate said "Oh, is Mr. T'ieh here? I would like to meet him." Mr. Huang then waved to him and shouted "Mr. T'ieh come over here." Mr. Decadent had been sitting on the same bench as Mr. Huang, but because the magistrate came over, he had joined the crowd, pretending to watch the fire; when he heard Mr. Huang calling him, he went over, greeted the magistrate and said a few polite words. The magistrate had his stool, so Mr. Decadent and Mr. Huang still sat on the long bench. This magistrate was called Wang Tze-ching, and he was also from South of the River, and a native of Mr. Decadent's district. Although he was a government scholar, he was no fool. By this time the fire was completely out, and the magistrate wanted to take them to spend the night in the yamen, but Mr. Huang said "Since my room has escaped burning I can still move back; only Mr. T'ieh now has no home to return to." "That

老殘與黃人瑞正在東牆看人救火，只見外面一片燈籠火把，縣官已到。帶領人夫，手執撓鉤長桿等件，前來救火。進得門來，見火勢已衰一面用撓鉤將屋扯倒，一面飭人取黃河淺處薄冰拋入火裏，以壓火勢，那火也就漸漸的熄了。縣官見黃人瑞立在東牆下，走上前來，請了一個安，說道：「老憲臺受驚不小！」人瑞道：「也還不怎樣，但是我們補翁燒得苦點。」因向縣官道：「子翁！我介紹你會個人，此人姓鐵，號補殘，」縣官道：「噯呀呀！鐵補殘在此地嗎？快請過來相會！」人瑞即招手大呼道：「殘兄請這邊來！」

老殘本與人瑞坐在一條凳上，因見縣官來，踱過人叢裏，借看火爲迴避，今聞招呼，遂走過來，與縣官作了個揖，彼此道些景慕的話頭。縣官有馬札子，老殘與人瑞仍坐長凳子上。

原來這齊河縣姓王，號子謹，也是江南人，與老殘同鄉，雖是個進士出身，倒不糊塗。

當時火已全熄，縣官要扯二人到衙門去住，人瑞道：「上房既未燒着，我仍可以搬入去住，只是鐵公未免無家可歸了。」老殘道：「不妨，不妨。此時夜已深，不久便自天明，天明後，我自會上街置辦行李，毫

doesn't matter" said Mr. Decadent, "The night is already nearly spent, and it will soon be dawn, then I shall go to the street to buy bedding. It won't be inconvenient." The magistrate insisted that Mr. Decadent should go to the yamen, but the latter said "I don't mind troubling Mr. Huang, so don't worry about me. Then the magistrate, looking much concerned, asked "What did you lose in the fire? You must have suffered great losses. But whatever we can procure in our district, we shall try to make good your loss to the best of our ability." Mr. Decadent laughed and said "One set of bedding, one bamboo case, two pairs of cotton underwear, some old books and one iron clapper; that's all." The magistrate smiled and said "That couldn't be all" and they laughed.

Just as the magistrate was about to leave, the local headman and bailiff led in a man in chains, who knelt on the ground kowtowing continuously like a chicken pecking rice, and crying without stop "May Your Grace have mercy! May Your Grace have mercy!" The headman knelt on one knee and reported "The fire started in this old man's room. May I ask Your Grace whether we should take him to the yamen or investigate the case here?" The magistrate then questioned the man: "What is your name and from which district are you? How did the fire start?" That man, kneeling, kowtowed again and said "My name is Chang and I am of this district, working as a servant in the neighbouring hotel. Yesterday I was busy from daybreak till nearly midnight before I was free to go back to my room to sleep; but my underclothes were soaked with perspiration, and lying down I felt very cold and could not stop shivering, so that I could not go to sleep. I saw there was a lot of straw

不礙事。』縣官又苦苦的勸老殘到衙門裏去，老殘說：『我打攪黃兄是不妨的，請放心罷。』縣官又殷勤問道：『補翁燒了些甚麼東西？未免太破財了。但是敝縣購辦得出的，自當稍盡縣薄。』老殘笑道：『被衾一方，竹筒一隻，布衫褲兩件。破書幾本，鐵串鈴一枚，如此而已。』縣官笑道：『不確罷。』也就笑着。

正要告辭，只見地保同着差人，一條鐵索，鎖了一個人來，跪在地下，像雞子啄米似的，連連磕頭，嘴裏只叫：『大老爺天恩！大老爺天恩！』那地保跪一條腿在地下，稟道：『火就是這個老頭兒屋裏起的。請大老爺示：還是帶回衙門去審？還是在那裏審？』

縣官便問道：『你姓什麼？叫甚麼？那裏人？怎麼樣起的火？』只見那地下的人，又連連磕頭，說道：『小的姓張，叫張二，是本城裏人，在這隔壁店裏做長工。因為昨兒從天明起來，忙到晚上二更多天，纔稍爲空閒一點，回到屋裏睡覺，誰知小衫袴汗濕透了，剛睡下來，冷得異常，越冷越打戰，就睡不着了。小的看這屋裏，放着好些粟楷，就抽了幾根，燒着烘一烘，又想起窗戶臺上有上房客人吃贖下的酒，賞小的吃

in the room, so I took some and burnt it to warm myself. Then I remembered there was wine left by the visitors for me by the window ledge, so I warmed it by the fire and drank a few cups. But as I was tired out, what with the warmth and some cups of wine inside me, somehow as I was sitting there I fell asleep. I had just dropped off when in a very short time I smelt smoke choking me. I quickly opened my eyes and my padded coat was already partly burnt, while the matting wall had caught fire; so I quickly ran out to look for water, but by then the fire had spread through the roof and I could do nothing. This is the whole truth. May Your Grace have mercy." The magistrate cursed him, saying "Fool" and ordered "Take him to the office." Then he stood up, and saying goodbye to Mr. Huang and Mr. T'ieh, he hastily departed.

The fire was now quite extinguished and there was only white smoke coming out. Mr. Huang saw his servant direct men to carry his things back to his rooms and put them in order, and said "There is still a smell of smoke about the rooms. Better burn some incense to drive the smell away." Then he smiled and said to Mr. Decadent "Now do you still insist on going back to your room?" Mr. Decadent said "It is all because you insisted on keeping me. If I had been in my room, my things would not all have been lost." "Is that so?" said Mr. Huang, "If I let you go, you would probably have been burnt also. You are really an ungrateful wretch to complain instead of thanking me." "Do you take me for a dead man incapable of movement?" asked Mr. Decadent, "If you don't make good my loss, you needn't think I shall let you off." As they were talking the door screen was raised and Mr. Huang's servant led in a bailiff

的，就拿在火上煨熱了，喝了幾鍾；誰知道一天乏透的人，得了點煖氣，又有兩杯酒下了肚，糊裏糊塗，坐在那裏，就睡着了。剛睡着，一霎兒的工夫，就覺得鼻子裏烟槍的難受，慌忙睜開眼來，身上棉襖已經燒着了一大塊，那粟楷打的壁子，已通着了。趕忙出來找水來潑，那火已自出了屋頂，小的也沒有法子了。所招是實，求大老爺天恩。」

縣官罵了一聲「渾蛋！」說：「帶到衙門裏辦去罷。」說罷，立起身來，向黃鐵二公告辭。匆匆的去了。

那時火已熄盡，只冒白氣，人瑞看着黃升帶領衆人，又將物件搬入，依舊陳列起來。人瑞道：「屋子裏烟火氣太重，燒盒萬壽香來薰薰。」人瑞笑向老殘道：

「鐵公我看你還忙着回屋去不回呢？」老殘道：「都是被你一留再留的留壞了，倘若我在屋裏，不至於被他燒得這們乾淨」人瑞道：「咦！不害臊！要是讓你回去，只怕連你還燒死在裏頭呢！你不好好的謝我，反來埋怨我，真是不識好歹。」老殘道：「難道我是死人嗎？你不賠我，看我同你干休嗎？」

說着，只見門簾揭起，黃升領了一個戴大帽子的

wearing a tall hat, who bowed to Mr. Decadent and said "My master's respects, and we have brought some bedding. It is our master's own, and he hopes, sir, you will excuse its being somewhat soiled. Tomorrow we shall call the tailor quickly to make new bedding and bring it over. Our master hopes you can put up with this for the night. There is also a fox skin gown and jacket which he hopes you will accept." Mr. Decadent stood up and said "I am sorry to have troubled your master. I shall keep the bedding here for the time being and borrow it for a few days until I have bought some for myself, when I shall return it. Regarding clothes, I have all mine on me, and they were not burnt; so I shall not trouble your master for any. Please thank your master for me when go back." But the servant would not take back the clothes until Mr. Huang said to him "Mr T'ieh will certainly not accept the clothes. You can tell your master that I told you to take them back." Then the servant bowed again and departed.

Mr. Decadent said "It doesn't matter that my things were burnt, but it was due entirely to your trouble-making that Emerald Ring's bedding was burnt as well. Can you deny that that might have been avoided?" "That matters even less" said Mr. Huang. "Regarding her bedding, it can't be worth ten taels of silver altogether. Tomorrow I will give her fifteen taels and her mistress will not be able to contain herself for joy." "Yes indeed," said Emerald Ring, "It must be owing to my bad luck that this bedding and so many good things of Mr. T'ieh's were lost." Mr. Decadent said "I had nothing valuable except two Sung dynasty editions, which can't be bought with money, and that is a pity. But this seems to be fate, so we must submit

進來，對着老殘打了一個千兒，說：『敝上說給鐵大老爺請安。送了一付鋪蓋來，是敝上自己用的，腌臢點，請大老爺不要嫌棄，明天叫裁縫趕緊做新的送過來，今夜先將就點兒罷。又狐皮袍子馬褂一套，請大老爺隨使用罷。』

老殘立起來道：『累你們貴上費心，行李暫且留在這裏，借用一兩天，等我自己買了，就繳還；衣裳我已經都穿在身上，並沒有燒掉，不勞貴上費心了，回去多多道謝。』那家人還不肯把衣服帶去。黃人瑞便說：『衣服鐵老爺決不肯收的，你就說我說的，你帶回去罷。』家人又打了個千兒去了。

老殘道：『我的燒去也還罷了，總是你瞎搗亂，平白的把翠環的一捲行李，也燒在裏頭，你說冤不冤呢？』黃人瑞道：『那纔更不要緊呢。我說他那鋪蓋，總共值不到十兩銀子，明日賞他十五兩銀子，他媽要喜歡的受不得呢。』翠環道：『可不是呢。大約就是我這個倒霉的人，一捲鋪蓋，害了鐵老爺許多好東西都毀掉了。』

老殘道：『物件倒沒有值錢的。只可惜我兩部宋

to it." "I don't think Sung dynasty editions matter" said Mr. Huang, "The only pity is that your physician's clapper is destroyed, for that means you will lose your livelihood." Mr. Decadent said "Yes, you will have to pay for that at least. You can't refuse to do that." Mr. Huang then stood up and said to him "All right, all right. Her bedding is burnt and your clapper is burnt. This is most auspicious. Congratulations. So he bowed to Emerald Ring and to Mr. Decadent, saying "From now on she will not have to sell herself, and you won't have to act as a quack." "Very good!" shouted Mr. Decadent, "Nicely cursed! Emerald Ring, why don't you go and pinch his lips." "Amida Buddha" said Emerald Ring, "You are both very kind." Then Emerald Flower nodded and said "Emerald Ring will henceforward lead a good life, and Mr. T'ieh will in future become an official; so this fire is a very auspicious fire. I should congratulate you both also." Mr. Decadent said "If what you say is true, she will be leading a good life, but I shall be leading a bad one."

They warmed themselves over the fire, chatting casually, and so two or three hours slipped away without their noticing it, until the east was already beginning to grow bright, and Mr. Huang said "Now we should have some sleep." So Mr. Huang and Mr. Decadent slept on the two ends of the bed, while the two girls slept in the middle of the bed, and very soon they were all sound asleep. When they woke up it was already noon, and the man from their mistress was waiting to take them back. He rolled up the bedding and took it away. Mr. Huang said "Bring them back this evening. We shall not send anyone to fetch them." The man assented and went out with the two girls, and Emerald

板書，是有錢沒處買的，未免可惜，然也是天數，只索聽他罷了。人瑞道：『我看宋板書，倒也不稀奇，只是可惜你那搖的串鈴子也毀掉，豈不是失了你的衣飯盃了嗎？』老殘道：『可不是呢。這可應該你賠了罷。還有甚麼說的。』

人瑞立起身來笑說道：『罷，罷，罷。燒了他的鋪蓋，燒了你的串鈴，大吉大利！恭喜恭喜！』對着翠環作了個揖，又對老殘作了個揖，說道：『從今以後，他也不用做賣皮的婊子，你也不要做說嘴的郎中了。』老殘大叫道：『好，好。罵的好苦，翠環你還不去擰他的嘴！』翠環道：『阿彌陀佛！總是兩位的慈悲。』翠花點點頭道：『環妹由此從良，鐵老爺由此做官，這把火倒也實在是把大吉大利的火。我也得替二位道喜。』老殘道：『依你說來，他却從良我却從賤了。』

大家烘着火，隨便閒話。兩三點鐘工夫，極容易過，不知不覺，東方已自明了。

這裏人瑞道：『我們這時該睡了。』於是黃鐵睡在兩邊，二翠睡在當中，不多一刻，都已鼾鼾睡着。一覺醒來，已是午牌時候，翠花家夥計早已在前面等候，

Ring turned her head, her eyes filled with tears, saying "Don't forget," and Mr. Huang and Mr. Decadent nodded smiling. Then they washed their faces, rested a while and had lunch. By the time they finished lunch it was after two o'clock, and Mr. Huang went to the yamen. He returned after some two hours, saying "The magistrate wanted to invite you there to dinner; but I said 'That's not good; it would be better to send over a good feast, and let me act as host for you.' So I am entrusted with this task. What do you think of it?" Mr. Decadent said "Fine. You have a free meal, while I am put under an obligation to him. That is all very well for you, but what will you eat if I send the feast back?" Mr. Huang said "If you think you can send it back, then do as you please. I shall starve together with you."

As they were speaking a man wearing a cap with red tassels came to the door, holding a visiting card, followed by a man carrying the hamper. He came to the room, lifted the screen and entered, and said to Mr. Huang, looking at Mr. Decadent "Is this Mr. T'ieh?" Mr. Huang said "Yes." Then the messenger went forward and saluted him, saying "Our master says this is a poor district, and we have nothing good to eat; so he sends over a simple meal and hopes you will put up with it, sir." Mr. Decadent said "Meals are very convenient here, so that your master need not trouble. Please take it back and send it to someone else." The messenger said "My master ordered me to ask you to accept it. I dare not take it back, or I shall be reprimanded." Mr. Huang meanwhile had taken a piece of paper from the table, and a pen, and said to the servant. "Tell them to carry it to the kitchen." The servant opened the hamper

接了他姊妹兩個回去，將鋪蓋捲了一并擗着就走。人瑞道：『傍晚就送他們姐兒倆來，我們這兒不派人去叫了。』夥計答應着是，便同兩人前去。翠環回過頭來，眼淚汪汪的道：『你別忘了啊！……』人瑞老殘俱笑着點點頭。二人洗臉，歇了片刻，就吃午飯，飯畢已兩下多鐘，人瑞自進縣署去了。過了兩個多鐘頭，人瑞從外面回來，說：『子謹本想請你進去吃飯，我說：「不好，倒不如送桌好好的菜去，我替你陪客罷！」我討了這個差使來的，你看好不好？』老殘道：『好。你吃白食，我擔人情，你倒便宜；我把他辭掉，看你吃甚麼？』人瑞道：『你只要有本事辭，只管辭我就陪你挨餓。』』

說着，門口已有一個戴紅纓帽兒的，拿了一個全帖，後面跟着一個挑食盒的進來，直走到上房，揭起暖簾進來，對着人瑞望老殘說：『這位就是鐵老爺罷？』人瑞說：『不錯。』那家人便搶前一步，請了一個安，說：『敝上說，小縣分沒有好菜，送了一桌粗飯請大老爺包涵點。』老殘道：『這店裏飯很便當，不消貴上費心，請挑回去，另送別位罷。』家人道：『主

for their inspection, and it was a very sumptuous feast with sharks' fins. Mr. Decadent said "We should not even accept a simple meal, but this is much too lavish. We cannot take it." However Mr. Huang had already written a note which he handed to the messenger, saying "This is Mr. T'ieh's reply. Take it back and thank your master for us." Then he told his man to give that messenger a string of cash and two hundred cash to the man carrying the hamper. The messenger saluted them both, thanked them and left.

Then Mr. Huang's servant brought in the lamp, and in less than half an hour the two girls arrived, and the man accompanying them, without waiting for orders, carried their bedding into the room. Mr. Huang said "Your bedding was made very quickly, to be ready in half a day." Emerald Flower said "There is plenty of bedding in our place; we have more than enough." The servant came in and asked "Are you ready for dinner, sir?" and Mr. Huang said "Yes." After a little while the dishes were ready, and Mr. Huang said "Although the north wind has dropped today, it is still very cold. Let us quickly warm some wine and drink a few cups. Today we are very happy, so let us drink a little more." The two girls took their fiddles and sang a couple of songs to accompany the drinking; but Mr. Huang said "No need to sing. Come and drink with us." When Emerald Ring heard this she suddenly frowned and became silent. This was because she thought that although they were powerful she did not know whether they had meant what they said the last night or not; and if they had spoken casually, once this opportunity was lost she would never have such a chance again all her life. So she frowned. Then she

人吩咐，總要大老爺賞臉，家人萬不敢挑回去。要挨罵的。」人瑞在桌上拿了一張箋紙，拔開筆帽，對着那家人道：『你叫他們挑到前頭灶屋裏去。』那家人揭開盒蓋，請老爺們過眼。原來是一桌極豐盛的魚翅席。老殘道：『便飯就當不起，這酒席太客氣，更不敢當了。』人瑞用筆在花箋上已經寫完，遞與那家人，說：『這是鐵老爺的回信，你回去說謝謝就是了。』又叫黃升賞了家人一吊錢，挑盒子的二百錢，家人打了兩個千兒，道了謝，便去了。

這裏黃升掌上燈來，不消半個時辰，翠花翠環俱到。他那夥計不等吩咐。已揷了兩個小行李捲兒進來，送到房裏去。人瑞道：『你們鋪蓋真做得快！半天工夫，就齊了嗎？』翠花道：『家裏有的是鋪蓋，對付着就殼用了。』黃升進來，問：『開飯不開飯？』人瑞說：『開罷？』停了一刻，已先將碟子擺好。人瑞道：『今日北風雖然不刮，還是很冷，快溫酒來喝兩杯！今天十分快樂，我們多喝兩杯。』二翠俱拿起絃子來，唱兩個曲子侑酒。人瑞道：『不必唱了。你們也喝兩杯酒罷。』

thought again how her mistress would certainly have her sold by the end of the year and K'uai the Baldhead was so fierce that sooner or later she would certainly die; and at that her face became ashen pale. Again she thought how she was a girl from a proper family, now sunk so low that it was really better to die, and her face took on a resolute expression. But yet, she thought, if she died, although she would be all right, there would be no one to look after her six year old brother, so that he would surely die of starvation too. And if he were to die of starvation not only would there be no one doing sacrifice to her parents' ghosts, but it would mean the end of the family, therefore she knew she would not die. So, thinking this way and that, she felt she could neither live nor die; thus she could not prevent her tears from falling, and hastily took her handkerchief to wipe them away.

Emerald Flower seeing this said "You silly girl, The gentlemen are happy today? What has possessed you again?" Mr. Huang looking at her only laughed, while Mr. Decadent nodded to her and said "Do not think foolish thoughts. We will devise a way to help you." Mr. Huang said "All right. With Mr. T'ieh helping you, what I said last night need not be counted." Hearing this Emerald Ring was greatly alarmed, and felt even more sure that what she feared was true. She was just going to question Mr. Huang when the servant led in a messenger who saluted Mr. Huang and handed him a red envelope. Mr. Huang took the envelope, opened it and looked inside, then put it in his pocket saying "I understand" after which he laughed incessantly to himself. Then the servant asked "Would you come out for a few minutes, sir?" and Mr. Huang went out

却說翠環聽了這話，忽然將柳眉雙鎖，默默無言。你道什麼緣故？他因想他們的權力，雖然設用，只不知昨晚所說的話，究竟是真是假；倘若隨便說說就罷了的呢，這個機會錯過，便終身無出頭之望，所以雙眉又鎖起來了。又想到他媽今年年底，一定要轉賣他，那蒯二禿子兇惡異常，早遲是個死，不覺臉上就泛了死灰的氣色。又想到自己好好一個良家女子，怎樣流落得這等下賤形狀，倒不如死了的乾淨，眉宇間又泛出一種英毅的氣色來。又想到自己死了，原無不可，只是一個六歲的小兄弟，有誰撫養，豈不也是餓死嗎？他若餓死，不但父母無人祭供，并祖上的香煙，從此便絕；這們想法，是自己又死不得了。想來想去，活又活不成，死又死不得，不知不覺那淚珠子便撲簌簌的滾將下來，趕緊用手絹子去擦。

翠花看見道：『你這妮子，老爺們今天高興。你又發甚麼昏？』人瑞看着他；只是憨笑。老殘對他點了點頭，說：『你不用胡思亂想！我們總要替你想法子的！』人瑞道：『好，好！有鐵老爺一手提拔你，我昨晚說的話，可是不算數的了。』翠環聽了大驚，愈覺

and was absent for half an hour before he walked slowly back, looking at three people who were silent there without a word, and this only seemed to increase his delight.

Then the magistrate's servant came in and saluted Mr. Decadent, saying "My master told me to take back the bedding sent yesterday." Mr. Decadent was surprised and thought "What is this? If he takes that away what shall I sleep in?" But since the bedding was not his he could not insist on keeping it, so he said "Very well, take it away." But he felt somewhat taken aback. He saw the servant go to the room and take the bedding out, and then Mr. Huang said "Today we were very happy, but since Emerald Ring is sad, I am not happy any more. I won't drink any more wine. Take the dishes away." Then the servant came and did indeed take away the dishes, whereat not only were the two girls surprised, but even Mr. Decadent felt bewildered. Then the servant led in the man from the procuress, who took Emerald Ring's bedding away also.

Emerald Ring hastily asked "But why, why? Don't they want me here?" The man said "I don't know. I only have orders to take the bedding back," Emerald Ring could now no longer contain herself and was convinced that some disaster was impending; so with tears in her eyes she knelt before Mr. Huang and said "Although I am worthless, won't you gentlemen be merciful? Once you are angry we shall die." Mr. Huang said "I am very happy. Why shouldn't I be? But regarding your affair, it is not my business. You go and ask Mr. T'ieh." Emerald Ring then kneeled to Mr. Decadent and said "You, sir, must save me," Mr. Decadent said "Why? Why should I save you? Emerald Ring said "Now they are taking away the bedding. It must

得他自己慮的是不錯，正要向人瑞請問，只見黃升同了一個人進來，朝人瑞打了個千兒，遞過一個紅紙封套去。人瑞接過來，撐開封套口，朝裏一窺，便揣到懷裏去，說道『知道了。』更不住的嘻嘻價笑。只見黃升說：『請老爺出來說兩句話。』人瑞便走出去，約有半個時辰，纔慢慢地踱了進來，看着三個人，俱默默相對，一言不發，人瑞愈觀高興。又是那縣裏的家人進來，向老殘打了一個千兒說：『敝上說，叫把昨兒個的一捲舊鋪蓋取回去。』老殘一楞，心裏想道：『這是甚麼道理呢？你取了去，我睡甚麼呢？然而究竟是人家的物件，不便強留。』便說：『你取了去罷。』心裏却是納悶。看着那家人進房，取將去了。只見人瑞道：『今兒我們本來很高興的，被這翠環一個人不痛快，惹的我也不痛快了，酒也不吃了，連碟子都撤下去罷！』又是黃升來，當真把些碟子都撤了下去。此時不但二翠摸不着頭腦，連老殘也覺得詫異的很。隨即黃升帶着翠環家夥計，把翠環的鋪蓋捲也搬走了。

翠環忙問：『噲事？噲事？怎麼不教我在這裏嗎？』

夥計說：『我不知道。光聽說叫我取回鋪蓋捲去。』

be that last night's conversation is known to our mistress, and she will not let me stay here today, but is going to force me back so that tomorrow she can lead me far away. For what chance has she against officials? Flight is the best policy for her." Mr. Decadent said "What she says is right. We must find a way to help her. Once her mistress takes her back, it is going to be difficult." Mr. Huang said "Of course, you should keep her. But if you don't keep her, who else can?"

Mr. Decadent helped Emerald Ring up, at the same time saying to Mr. Huang "I don't understand you. Do you really mean that what you said last night goes for nothing?" Mr. Huang said "I have thought it over thoroughly, and I can have nothing to do with it. Just think for yourself. To ransom a girl one must have a pretext; but if you don't want to be involved and I don't want to be involved, then what can we do? Even if we do take her out, where should we put her? If we have her in the hotel while neither of us will have her as his concubine, outsiders will certainly think me responsible. I have just been promoted and there are many people jealous of me who would certainly tell the Governor; then I should not be able to work any longer in Shantung, much less think of promotion. Thus I must definitely be out of it." Upon consideration Mr. Decadent knew that his argument was sound; but he could not endure the thought of not rescuing a girl from shame because of this, so he said again to Mr. Huang "Even so, we must think of a good plan." Mr. Huang said "You think. If you can think of a plan, I will certainly help." Mr. Decadent thought, but could not think of a plan, so he said "Although there is no way, we must reconsider it carefully." Mr.

翠環此時按捺不住，料到一定凶多吉少，不覺含淚跪到人瑞面前說：『我不好，你是老爺們呢，難道不能包涵點嗎？你老一不喜歡，我們就活不成了！』人瑞道：『我喜歡的很呢！我爲啥不喜歡！這是你的事，我却管不着，你慢慢的求鐵老爺去。』翠環又跪向老殘面前，說：『還是你老救我！』老殘道：『甚麼事？我救你呢！』翠環道：『取回鋪蓋，一定是昨兒話走了風聲，俺媽知道，今兒不讓我在這兒，早晚要逼我回去，明天就遠走高飛了。——他敢同官鬥嗎？就只有走，是個好法子。』老殘道：『這話也說的是。人瑞哥！你得想個法子，挽留住他纔好。一被他媽接回去，這事就不好下手了。』人瑞道：『那是何消說，自然要挽留他。——你不挽留他，誰能挽留他呢！』

老殘一面將翠環拉起，一面向人瑞道：『你的話，我怎麼不懂？難道昨夜說的話，當真不算數了嗎！』人瑞道：『我已澈底想過，只有不管的一法。你想：拔一個姐兒從良，總也得有個辭頭，你也不承認，我也不承認，這話怎樣說呢？把他弄出來，又望那裏安置呢？若是在店裏，我們兩個人，都不承認，外人一定說是

Huang said "I have a plan only you would not agree to it, so there is no need to mention it." "Just say what it is" said Mr. Decadent, "and I will try to do it." Mr. Huang said "You must agree to have her as your concubine; then we shall have a pretext." Mr. Decadent said "All right." Mr. Huang said "Do you think a casual promise is enough? I am taking charge of this, and if I tell people that you want her for your concubine, who would believe me? I can only do it if you write me a letter in your own hand-writing." "That's difficult to write" said Mr. Decadent. "I know you wouldn't do it" said Mr. Huang. "Wasn't I right?"

Mr. Decadent was hesitating when the two girls pleaded to him together, saying "What does it matter to you? Do consent, sir." Mr. Decadent said "How shall I write this letter, and to whom?" Mr. Huang said "Naturally you will write to the Magistrate. You can say 'So and so, a singing girl, originally belonged to a good family but is now in a pitiable condition, and I want to take her out of this bad society and make her my concubine. Please condescend to help me. I shall return you the ransom money later.' With such a letter I shall be able to do it, and afterwards you will be free either to present her to someone else or to choose a husband for her, and I shall escape slander. Otherwise how can it be done?"

Just as he was speaking, the servant came in and said "Mistress Emerald Ring, people from your mistress are asking for you." When Emerald Ring heard this, her soul seemed to take flight, and she wrinkled her brow, at the same time begging Mr. Decadent to write the letter. Emerald Flower then took out paper, pen and ink from the inner room, wet the pen, sighed and said to Emerald Ring,

我弄出，斷無疑義，我剛纔得了個好點的差使，忌妒的人很多，能不告訴宮保嗎？以後我就不用在山東混了，還想甚麼保舉呢？所以是斷乎做不得的。」老殘一想，話也有理，只是因此就見死不救，於心實也難忍，加着翠環不住的啼哭，實在爲難，便向人瑞道：「話雖如此，也得想個萬全的法子纔好。」人瑞道：「我請你想，如想得，我一定助力。」老殘想了想，實無法子，便道：「雖無法子，也得大家想想。」人瑞道：「我倒有個法子，你又做不到，所以只好罷休。」老殘道：「你說出來，我總可以設法。」人瑞道：「除非你承認了要他，纔好措辭。」老殘道：「我就承認，也不要緊。」人瑞道：「空口說白話，能行嗎？事是我辦，我告訴人，說你要，誰信呢？除非你親筆寫封信給我，那我就有法辦了。」老殘道：「信是不好寫的。」人瑞道：「我說你做不到，是不是呢？」

老殘正在躊躇，却被二翠一齊上來央告，說：「這也不要緊的事，你老就担承一下子罷！」老殘道：「信怎樣寫，寫給誰呢？」人瑞道：「自然寫給王子謹。你就說：「是一妓女某人，本係良家，甚爲可憫，弟擬拔

"It seems it can't be helped. For your sake I shall have to put my name to a statement." Emerald Ring said "I will kowtow to you a thousand times. This that you are doing is better than building a seven-storied pagoda." By then Mr. Decadent had finished writing and he gave the letter to Mr. Huang, saying "My work is done. If you still can't arrange it satisfactorily, that will be your fault." Mr. Huang took the letter, gave it to his servant, and said "Take this to the yamen presently."

During the time that Mr. Decadent was writing his letter Mr. Huang whispered many words into Emerald Flower's ear. When the servant took the letter he said to Emerald Ring "Your mistress is waiting for you. Better go quickly." But Emerald Ring still would not go, looking at Mr. Huang mutely imploring him for help. "Never mind" said Mr. Huang, "You can go. I shall look after everything." Thereupon Emerald Flower stood up, and taking Emerald Ring's hand, said "If I go with you, will you worry? There is really nothing at all to worry about." Then Emerald Ring could do nothing, so she said "Excuse me" and went out.

Then Mr. Huang lay down on the bed to smoke and talked casually to Mr. Decadent. After about an hour when Mr. Huang had finished smoking, his servant came in wearing a brand new tall hat, and said "Please come over, sir." Mr. Huang said "Oh," then stood up and drew Mr. Decadent with him, saying "Let's sit over there." Mr. Decadent was surprised and said "Where is this 'over there'?" Mr. Huang said "This 'over there' came into being today." For the inner chambers of the hotel consisted of two suites, each with three sets of rooms. Mr. Huang

出風塵，納爲篷室，請兄鼎力維持，身價若干，如數照繳。……」我拿了這信，就有辦法。將來任憑你送人也罷，擇配也罷，你就有了主權，我也不遭聲氣；不然，那有辦法？」

正說着，只見黃升進來說：『翠環姑娘出來！你家裏人請你呢！』翠環一聽，魂飛天外，一面說就去，一面拚命央告老殘寫信。翠花就到房裏取出紙筆墨硯來，將筆蘸飽，遞到老殘手裏。老殘接過筆來，嘆口氣，向翠環道：『冤不冤，爲你的事，要我親筆畫供呢！』翠環道：『我替你老磕一千個頭，你老就爲一回難，勝造七級浮圖！』老殘已在紙上如說寫就，遞與人瑞說：『我的職分已盡，再不好好的辦，罪就在你了！』人瑞接過信來，遞與黃升說：『停一會送到縣裏去。』

當老殘寫信的時刻，黃人瑞向翠花耳中說了許多的話，黃升接過信來，向翠環道：『你媽等你說話呢！快去罷！』翠環仍泥着不肯去，眼看着人瑞，有求救的意思，人瑞道：『你去不要緊的，諸事有我呢！』翠花立起來，拉了翠環的手說：『環妹！我同你去，你放

occupied the three rooms on the west and there were also three rooms on the east, which had previously been occupied; but that morning the former occupant had left to cross the river, leaving the rooms vacant. The two men went hand in hand to the rooms on the eastside, and by the time they climbed the steps someone had already lifted the screen. Above the square table in the middle hung a canopy, on the table were set two red candles and on the floor a red rug. When they entered the hall they noticed that in the room on the east side there was another square table facing south, also with a canopy, while on the north side there were two chairs side by side and two chairs one on each side, all with cushions. The table was covered with candied fruit, looking even more tempting than what they had had before, and the room on the west side had a red velvet door screen.

Mr. Decadent in surprise started asking "What is this?" When he heard Mr. Huang call out "Bring the young lady out to see her master." Then the screen was lifted and a maid-servant on the left and Emerald Flower on the right helped out a beautiful girl, with flowers covering her head, wearing a purple cloak, green tunic, and rose skirt, who walked with lowered head to the red rug. Mr. Decadent, looking carefully, saw that this was Emerald Ring, and shouted aloud "What is this? This won't do." Mr. Huang said "You have already signed the statement. What more have you to say?" and without listening to his protests he dragged Mr. Decadent towards a chair; but he would not sit down. By this time Emerald Ring had already bowed down before him, so Mr. Decadent could not do anything but bow back, and the maidservant said "Please sit down, Mr. Huang. The go-between must be thanked."

心罷？你太太的放心罷！」翠環無法，只得說聲告假，走出去了。

這裏人瑞却躺到烟炕上去燒烟，嘴裏七搭八搭的，同老殘說話。約計有一點鐘工夫，人瑞烟也吸足了，只見黃升戴着簇新的大帽子進來，說：『請老爺們那邊去。』人瑞說：『啊！』便站起來，拉了老殘說：『那邊坐罷。』老殘詫異道：『幾時有個那邊出來？』人瑞說：『這個那邊，是今天變出來的。』原來這店裏的上房一排，本是兩個三間，人瑞住的是西邊三間，還有東邊的個三間，原有別人住着，今早動身過河去了，所以空下來。

黃鐵二人攜手走上東上房前，上了台階，早有人打起暖簾。只見正中方桌上挂着桌裙，桌上點了一對大紅蠟燈，地下鋪了一條紅氈；走進堂門，見東邊一間，擺了一張方桌，朝南也繫着桌裙，上首平行兩張椅子，兩旁一邊一張椅子，都搭着椅披，桌上却擺了滿滿一桌的果碟，比方纔吃的還要好看些。西邊是隔斷的一間房，挂了一條紅大呢的門簾。

老殘詫異道：「這是什麼緣故？」只聽人瑞高聲

Then Emerald Ring bowed to him also, while Mr. Huang said "Oh no, no," and bowed to her in return. Then they took the bride back to her room.

Emerald Flower then came out and bowed in congratulation and the maid servants and others all offered their congratulations. Mr. Huang took Mr. Decadent to the bridal chamber where the new beddings were all made ready. There were two sets of red and green silk quilts, two red and green velvet rugs, and two pillows. Before the bed there was a purple silk curtain, on the table a red tablecloth and pair of red candles, and on the wall a pair of red scrolls on which was written:

Let us hope that all the lovers in the world will be married,

For when it is predestined one must not lose one's opportunity.

Mr. Decadent recognised Mr. Huang's writing, but the ink was not yet dry, and he laughed at Mr. Huang and said, "You are really a devil. These words are taken from the Marriage God's Temple on the West Lake. You have stolen them." Mr. Huang retorted "The words are good and can you say that they are not appropriate?" Then he took from his pocket a red envelope sent by the magistrate, and gave it to Mr. Decadent, saying "Look, this is the former sale's receipt of your concubine, and this is the new receipt. I present you with both of them together. Don't you think I am very thorough in the management of affairs?" Mr. Decadent said "Since this is done, I am most grateful; but why should you want to involve me in this?"

Mr. Huang said "Didn't I say that if a thing is predestined one must not lose one's opportunity? For Emerald

嚷道：「你們攙新姨奶奶出來，參見他們老爺。」只見門簾揭處，一個老媽子在左，翠花在右，攙著一箇美人出來，滿頭戴著都是花，穿著一件紅青外褂，葵綠襖子，繫一條粉紅裙子，却低著頭，走到紅氈子前，老殘仔細一看，原來就是翠環。大叫道：「這是怎麼說，斷乎不可！」人瑞道：「你親筆字據都寫了，還狡獪甚麼？」不由分說，拉老殘往椅子上去坐，老殘那裏肯坐，這裏翠環早已磕下頭去了，老殘沒法，也只好回了半禮。又見老媽子說：「黃大老爺請坐，謝大媒。」翠環卻又磕下頭去，人瑞道：「不敢當，不敢當！」也還了一禮，當將新人送進房內。

翠花隨即出來磕頭道喜，老媽子等人也都道完了喜，人瑞拉老殘到房裏去，原來房內新鋪蓋已陳設停妥，是紅綠湖縐被各一牀，紅綠大呢褥子各一條，枕頭兩個，炕前挂了一箇紅紫魯山紬的幔子，桌上鋪了紅桌氈，也是一對紅蠟燭，牆上卻挂了一副大紅對聯，上寫着：

「願天下有情人，都成了眷屬；是前生註定事，莫錯過姻緣。」

Ring's sake you had to do this, to make her secure; for when I rescue a person I like to do it properly, and from your point of view you don't lose anything either. All affairs should be managed like this." After he had spoken he laughed aloud, and said "Let's talk no more nonsense. I am ravenous. Let us have dinner now." So he pulled Mr. Decadent, and Emerald Flower pulled Emerald Ring, urging them to sit in the two seats of honour; but Mr. Decadent definitely declined, so finally they took down the canopy and the four sat down facing each other. During the feast it goes without saying that everyone was happy and the feast ended happily. Then the bride and bridegroom were sent to their chamber to sleep: there is no need to say more.

It is said that since Mr. Decadent was forced into marriage by Mr. Huang he could not feel satisfied until he had taken his revenge. Also he noticed that Emerald Flower had done a great deal for Emerald Ring, and that from an outsider's point of view she was a girl of good heart, so she should be ransomed too, but he had to await his opportunity.

The next day Mr. Huang came in and smiled at Emerald Ring, saying "Did you sleep well by the corner of the bed yesterday?" "I owe everything to your great kindness" said Emerald Ring, "I shall keep your shrine to worship." "That would be too much" said Mr. Huang. Then he said to Mr. Decadent "Yesterday the three hundred taels of silver were paid by the magistrate, so today I am going to the yamen to pay them for you. Those clothes and bedding were also a present from the magistrate but you need not be polite about them, for if you try to repay him he will not let you." Mr. Decadent said "That is too much, making

老殘卻認得是黃人瑞的筆蹟，墨痕還沒有甚乾呢。因笑向人瑞道：「你真會淘氣，這是西湖上月老祠的對聯，被你偷得來的。」人瑞道：「對聯便是好文章，你敢說不切當嗎？」人瑞卻從懷中把剛纔縣裏送來的紅封套遞給老殘說：「你瞧！這是貴如夫人原來的賣身契一紙，這是新寫的身契一紙，總共奉上。你看愚弟辦事周到不周到！」老殘說：「既已如此，感激得很！你又何苦把我套在圈子裏作甚麼呢？」

人瑞道：「我不對你說是前生註定事，莫錯過姻緣嗎？我爲翠環計，救人須救澈，非如此，總不十分妥當。爲你計，亦不吃虧，天下事就該這們作法，是不錯的。」說過，呵呵大笑。又說：「不用費話吧，我們肚子餓的了不待，要吃飯了。」人瑞拉著老殘，翠花拉著翠環，要他們兩個上坐。老殘決意不肯，仍是去了桌裙，四方兩對面坐的。這一席酒不消說，各人有各人的快樂處，自然是盡歡而散，以後無非是送展睡覺，無庸贅述。

卻說老殘被人瑞逼成好事，心裏有點不痛快，想要報復，又看翠花爲翠環事，出了許多心，冷眼看去，也是箇有良心的，須得把他也拔出來才好，且等將

other people spend so much on my account. You thank him first for me, and I shall try to repay him later." Mr. Huang then went to the yamen.

Mr. Decadent considered Emerald Ring's name rather vulgar moreover it would not be convenient to continue to call her by that name; so he inverted the two words, making the name Ring Emerald, and this used as her pet name, sounded better. In the afternoon he sent people to fetch her brother, and when he noticed that his clothes were ragged he gave him a few taels of silver and told that Mr. Li to take him away again to buy some clothes for him. Time passed very quickly, and soon five days had slipped away.

One day when Mr. Huang had gone to the yamen and Mr. Decadent was in the hotel teaching Ring Emerald to read, he suddenly heard the hotel people announcing "The Magistrate is coming." Presently the magistrate's sedan-chair arrived in the courtyard and he descended from his chair while Mr. Decadent went out of his door to welcome him. The magistrate came in and they sat down, and the magistrate said "I came here to congratulate you and to have a chat." Mr. Decadent said "The other day I was very grateful to you, and asked Mr. Huang to express my thanks to you; but I have not yet gone myself to thank you. I hope you will excuse me." "Don't mention it" replied the magistrate. Then Mr. Decadent told his concubine to come out to see him, and the magistrate presented a few trinkets as gifts.

Mr. Decadent said "The other day I asked people to take you three hundred taels of silver to repay you. Did you receive them?" The magistrate said "Not only did I

來，再作道理。

次日人瑞跑來，笑向翠環道：「昨兒炕畸角睡得安穩罷？」翠環道：「都是黃老爺大德成全，慢慢供恁的長生祿位牌。」人瑞道：「豈敢，豈敢。」說著，便向老殘道：「昨日三百銀子，是子謹墊出來的，今日我進署替你還帳去。這衣服衾枕是子謹送的，你也不用客氣了，想來送錢，他也是不肯收的。」老殘道：「這從那裏說起，叫人家花這許多錢？也只好你先替我道謝，再圖補報罷。」說著，人瑞自去縣裏。老殘因翠環的名字太俗，且也不便再叫了，遂替他顛倒一下換做環翠，卻算了一箇別號，便雅得多呢。午後命人把他兄弟找得來，看他身上衣服過于藍襖，給了他幾兩銀子，仍叫李五領去買幾件衣服給他穿，光陰迅速，不知不覺，已經五天過去。

那日，人瑞已進縣署裏去，老殘正在客店裏教環翠認字，忽聽店中夥計報道：「縣裏王大老爺來了。」霎時，子謹轎子已到階前，下轎，老殘迎出堂屋門口，子謹入來，分賓主坐下，說道：「兄弟來此與老哥道喜，并閒談一刻。」老殘說：「前日種種承情，已托人瑞兄代致謝忱，未即親去拜謝，想能見諒。」子謹謙

receive them, but I have received too much. Mr. Huang sent me three hundred taels and then you sent me three hundred taels, so that is too much. However I must pay both of you back." Mr. Decadent reflected for a moment and said "Mr. Huang also has a friend whose name is Emerald Flower, who belongs to the same house as my concubine and is quite a good natured girl. Since Mr. Huang is also rather lonely away from home, would you not get him a concubine too, using these two sums of money for the purchase?" The magistrate clapped his hands in approval and quickly gave instructions to his bailiff, telling him to have this done the next day.

The next day Mr. Decadent went to the yamen and learnt that four hundred and twenty taels of silver had been used to purchase Emerald Flower. The magistrate insisted on repaying his three hundred taels of silver, but Mr. Decadent would only accept one hundred and eighty. That night he told the hotel manager to hire a cart and fetch Ring Emerald's brother. Then he and Ring Emerald and her brother, together with Mr. Huang and Emerald Flower, left the next day at dawn to return to the provincial capital.

遜道：「豈敢，」隨命新人出來拜見了，子謹又送了幾件首飾，作拜見之禮。

老殘說：「前日託人帶來三百銀子還閣下，收到了嗎？」子謹道：「豈但收到，我已經發了財了。黃人瑞送了三百兩來，閣下又送三百兩來，豈不是發財嗎？兩款都當奉繳。」老殘沈吟了一會，說道：「我想人瑞也有個相契的，名叫翠花，就是同小妾一家子的，其人頗有良心，人瑞客中，也頗寂寞，不如老哥竟一不作二不休，將此兩款，替人瑞再揮一斧吧。」子謹拍掌叫好，立刻叫門差來告知此事，叫他明日就辦。

次日，老殘進縣署去，知翠花共用了四百二十兩銀子，子謹還三百銀子，老殘收了一百八十兩，夜間托店家雇了長車，把環翠的兄弟帶來，老殘攜同環翠並他兄弟，同人瑞翠花，天明開車結伴回省城去了。

(終)



中華民國三十六年十月初版

英漢
對照

老殘遊記

△白報紙本定價六元整▽

版權不
准翻印
所有權
有所不

譯者

楊

憲

益

發行者

獨

立

出

版

社

南京：申家巷二十一號

代表人

盧

逮

曾

印刷者

獨

立

出

版

社

經售處

全

國

各

大

書

獨立出版社各地分局

